Digitized by the Internet Archive
in 2008 with funding from
Microsoft Corporation

http://www.archive.org/details/memoirslifeofrev00gill

GEORGE WHITEFIELD. M.A.

Hone pinx.t *V.M Picot Sculp.t*

MEMOIRS

OF THE

LIFE

OF THE REVEREND

GEORGE WHITEFIELD, M.A.

Late CHAPLAIN to the Right Honourable

THE COUNTESS OF HUNTINGDON:

IN WHICH

Every Circumſtance worthy of Notice, both in his private and public Character, is recorded.

Faithfully ſelected from his Original PAPERS, JOURNALS, and LETTERS.

ILLUSTRATED BY

A Variety of intereſting and entertaining ANECDOTES, from the beſt Authorities.

To which are added,

A particular ACCOUNT of his DEATH and FUNERAL; and Extracts from the SERMONS, which were preached on that Occaſion.

COMPILED

By the Rev. JOHN GILLIES, D. D.

Yea doubtleſs I count all things but loſs, for the excellency of the knowledge of Chriſt Jeſus my Lord: For whom I have ſuffered the loſs of all things, and do count them but dung that I may win Chriſt. PHIL. iii. 8.

And I will very gladly ſpend, and be ſpent for you. 2 COR. xii. 15.

For he that winneth ſouls is wiſe. PROV. xi. 30.

And they that be wiſe ſhall ſhine as the brightneſs of the firmament, and they that turn many to righteouſneſs, as the ſtars for ever and ever. DAN. xii. 3.

LONDON:

Printed for EDWARD and CHARLES DILLY, in the Poultry; and Meſſieurs KINCAID and CREECH, at Edinburgh.

MDCCLXXII.

TO

THE RIGHT HONOURABLE

THE COUNTESS OF HUNTINGDON,

THESE MEMOIRS OF THE LIFE OF

THE REV. MR. WHITEFIELD,

ARE MOST RESPECTFULLY INSCRIBED,

BY

HER LADYSHIP'S

MOST OBEDIENT,

AND MOST HUMBLE SERVANT,

JOHN GILLIES.

Huntingdon 4.29.43 History

431321

THE CONTENTS.

CHAP. I.

HIS birth and parentage. — Page 1, 2
Early appearances of his eloquence at ſchool. 2, 3
At the age of ſeventeen, brought under the prevailing influence of religious impreſſions. 4

CHAP. II.

At eighteen, goes to the Univerſity of Oxford, and becomes acquainted with the Methodiſts. 5, 6
Is treated with great kindneſs by the Rev. Mr. John and Charles Weſley. — 6, 7
Endangers his health by exceſſive bodily auſterities, but is happily recovered. — 8
After his recovery feels great peace and joy in believing on the Son of GOD. — — 8
Erects a religious Society of young perſons at Glouceſter. — — — 8, 9
Is ordained by Biſhop Benſon in the 22d year of his age. — — — 9
His behaviour on that occaſion. — — 9
Preaches his firſt Sermon in Glouceſter. — 9

Returns to Oxford. — Page 9, 10
Is called to officiate at the Tower. — 10
And at Dummer in Hampſhire. — 11
Longs to go abroad, and preach the Goſpel in Georgia. — — 11, 12
Gladly embraces the firſt appearance of an invitation to go thither. — — 12
His great popularity at Glouceſter, Briſtol, and London, while he prepares to go abroad. 13, 14
Preaches in London nine times a week. — 15
Oppoſition from ſome of the Clergy. — 15

CHAP. III.

Embarks for Georgia, December 1737. — 17
His behaviour on board. — 17—20
Touches at Gibraltar, where he is courteouſly received. — — — 20, 21
Remarkable particulars in his voyage from Gibraltar to Georgia. — — 22—24
His obſervations upon the ſtate of the Colony, at his firſt arrival. — — 25, 26
Is convinced of the great utility of an Orphan-houſe there. — — 28, 29

CHAP. IV.

Re-embarks for England to receive Prieſt's orders, and get contributions for the Orphan-houſe. 30
Is driven into Limerick harbour in Ireland; and is kindly treated by Biſhop Burſcough, Dr. Delany, Biſhop Rundle, and Archbiſhop Bolton. 31
At his arrival in London, meets with a cold reception from the Archbiſhop of Canterbury, and the Biſhop of London. — 32

The Truſtees for Georgia receive him more cordially. — — Page 33
Offence taken at his Journals. — 34
Several Churches are refuſed to him, but he is more followed by the people than ever. — 34
Receives Prieſt's orders from Biſhop Benſon, January 1739. — — — 35
Makes collections for ſeveral charitable purpoſes. 35, 36
Preaches to the colliers in Kingſwood. 37, 38
Preaches in Wales with Mr. Howel Harris. 39, 40
Ventures to preach in Moorfields. — 42

CHAP. V.

Preaches on Kennington-Common and Blackheath, to prodigious multitudes, who were all attention. — — — 43, 44
Embarks the ſecond time for America, Auguſt 1739. — — — 46
Preaches at Philadelphia and New-York, and in ſeveral places in Maryland, Virginia, and the Carolinas. — — 46—49
While making collections for the Orphan-houſe, hires a place for the reception of the poor children. — — — 50
Begins to build the houſe, March 1740. 51

CHAP. VI.

Preaches in various places with great apparent ſucceſs. — — 53—62
Receives preſſing invitations to New England. 62
His reception there. — — *ibid.*
Comes back to Philadelphia, and preaches to ſeveral thouſands, in a houſe built for that purpoſe, ſince his laſt departure. — 63—66
Returns to England in ſpring 1741. — 67

CHAP. VII.

The people's behaviour towards him greatly changed. — — Page 68
Unwillingly parts from Mr. John and Charles Wesley. — — 69
Occasion of building the Tabernacle. 70—72
Is sollicited to visit Scotland. — 72
His parting from Messieurs Erskines. — 77

CHAP. VIII.

Letters shewing his reception, ministrations, and success, at the principal places in Scotland. 79
At Edinburgh. — 79—84
At Glasgow. — 85—87
At Aberdeen. — 87—91
At Dundee. — 91—96
At smaller places. — 98—103
A view of the whole (in notes) from the posthumous papers of a learned gentleman in Scotland. — — 96—98

CHAP. IX.

Returns to England, October 1741. — 104
His marriage at Abergavenny. — *ibid.*
His success at Bristol and London. 104—107
Ventures to preach in Moorfields in the holiday season. — — — 107
Remarkable success of that hazardous attempt. 108—110

CHAP. X.

Makes a second visit to Scotland, June 1742. 111
The religious concern at Cambuslang, &c. 112—118
Mr. Whitefield's account of it. — 119—122

Preaches in many towns and villages of Scotland. Page 123—126
Is alarmed with accounts of the Spaniards landing in Georgia. — — 127

CHAP. XI.

His labours at London and Briſtol, and in Glouceſterſhire and South Wales, 1743. 129—132
Continues to travel and preach through the country in the months of November and December. 133
The birth and death of his only child. — 134
Obtains a ſentence againſt certain rioters for abuſing the Methodiſts. — — 135
Writes his letters to the Biſhops, and to the Rev. Mr. Church. — — 136
Is in danger of being murdered in bed at Plymouth. — — 138, 139

CHAP. XII.

Embarks the third time for America, Auguſt 1744. — — — 141
Soon after his arrival is brought to the gates of death. — — — 142
His reception at Boſton different from what it was formerly. — — — 144
Preaches to the officers and ſoldiers that went againſt Cape Breton, 1745. — 147
Religious concern under the miniſtry of Mr. Gilbert Tennent, among the people of New England; and of Mr. David Brainard among the Indians. — — 149, 150
In Virginia he is much weakened by a complication of diſeaſes; yet continues to preach as often as he could. — — 151

CHAP. XIII.

Goes to Bermudas for the recovery of his health, and his Journal there. Page 154—172
Takes ſhipping for England, June 1748—And when on board retires and corrects his Journals. 172

CHAP. XIV.

On his arrival at London is ſent for by Lady Huntingdon to preach at her houſe. — 174
Several of the nobility deſire to hear him. *ibid.*
Makes a third viſit to Scotland. — 175
Debates concerning him in the Synod of Glaſgow and Ayr. — — 176—178
Has thoughts of turning his Orphan-houſe into a College, if the Truſtees would put the Colony of Georgia upon a better footing. 179
Correſponds with Mr. Hervey. — 180, 181
Is invited to Leeds by Mr. Weſley's ſocieties there. — — 182
Has an interview with Dr. Doddridge, Mr. Hervey, &c. — — 185
Makes another viſit to Scotland, July 1750. 187
After returning to London is ſeized with a fever, and inflammation of the lungs. — 188

CHAP. XV.

His firſt viſit to Ireland, May 1751. 190
Returns from Ireland by Glaſgow and Edinburgh. 191
Particulars relating to his viſits in Scotland; in a note. — — 192—195
Embarks the fourth time for America, where he finds the Orphan-houſe affairs flouriſhing. 196

Does

Does not ſtay the ſummer ſeaſon in America, on account of his health. — Page 196
Is glad to find at his return to England, May 1752, that Georgia was likely to be put upon a better footing. — — 197
Makes another viſit to Edinburgh and Glaſgow. 198
Mr. Hervey and he reviſe each other's manuſcripts. — — — 200
Erects a large new Tabernacle in London, and opens it. — — 201

CHAP. XVI.

Preaches at Glaſgow againſt the Play-houſe there, 1753. — — 204
His ſucceſs at Newcaſtle, Leeds, Oulney, &c. 205, 206
Opens the new Tabernacle at Briſtol. — 207
Haſtens to London to pay his laſt reſpects to Mr. John Weſley, who was thought to be dying. *ibid.*
Is viſited by Mr. Tennent and Mr. Davies from America. — — 208
March 1754, a fifth voyage to America, by Liſbon, where he ſtays ſome weeks. — *ibid.*
His reflections upon the Popiſh proceſſions, &c. 209, 210
Viſits the College of New Jerſey, and preaches ſeveral times before the Synod that met there. 211
Has ſome thoughts of going to the Weſt Indies. 212
Receives the agreeable news that a Governor was nominated for Georgia, and his friend Mr. Haberſham made Secretary. — *ibid.*

Prejudices

Prejudices againſt him in New-England, Virginia, &c. ſubſided. — — Page 213
In ſpring, 1755, returns to England, and rejoices to ſee the number of evangelical miniſters increaſed. — — *ibid.*
Opens the Tabernacle at Norwich. — 214
Preaches againſt Popery and arbitrary power (the nation being threatened with an invaſion). 215
Is obliged to be ſilent a few days in November by a ſore throat, which threatened an inflammatory quinſey. — — — *ibid.*
Meets with great oppoſition, when preaching at Long-Acre Chapel, near the Play-houſes. *ibid.*
His letters to the Biſhop of B——— on that occaſion. — — 216, 217
May, 1756, he begins to build his Chapel in Tottenham-Court-Road. — 219
Makes another viſit to Scotland, where his uſefulneſs is acknowledged by the friends of civil government. — — 220

CHAP. XVII.

In ſpring, 1757, he again viſits Scotland, and preaches at Edinburgh during the time of the General Aſſembly. — 223
Many miniſters attend his ſermons. — *ibid.*
At Glaſgow he makes a public collection for the poor of that city. — — 224
From Glaſgow goes a ſecond time to Ireland. *ibid.*
Narrowly eſcapes being murdered by the Popiſh rabble. — — — 225
After his return to London is brought very low by his extraordinary labours and thoughtfulneſs. — — 226
February, 1758, builds almſhouſes for widows around his Chapel. — — *ibid.*

Goes

Goes again to Edinburgh, where his preaching is acknowledged, as formerly, to be useful to the community, in a civil as well as a religious light. — — Page 228

CHAP. XVIII.

Summer, 1759, he makes another visit to Edinburgh. — — 230
Collections made at his sermons, for the benefit of the Orphan-hospital in Edinburgh. *ibid.*
Is ridiculed in a farce called the Minor. 232, 234
February 13, 1761, (the day of the public fast) collects near 600l. for the distrest German Protestants, and the sufferers in Boston. *ibid.*
His health, which had long been bad, now grows worse and worse; so that he is quite laid aside from preaching for some weeks. 235
In spring, 1762, goes to Bristol, when his health is so far restored that he is able to preach four or five times a week. — — 237
When he returns to London, the cares and labours that throng upon him are ready to bring him low again. — — *ibid.*
Goes a voyage to Holland. — — *ibid.*
Visits Scotland again in autumn 1762, and preaches every day. — — 238
Summer, 1763, embarks the sixth time for America, at Greenock. — — 239
Is much pleased with the conversation of several young ministers in America; and with accounts of the students at New-Jersey College. *ibid.*
Is forbid by the physicians to go to Georgia, till he gets more strength. — — *ibid.*
While at New-York, during the winter, he finds prejudices strangely subsided — 240

March, 1764, preaches in the places round Boſton (the ſmall-pox being in the town) and is delighted with the ſight of Mr. Wheelock's Indians. — — Page 241
Returns from Boſton ſouthward through New-York, Philadelphia, Virginia, and Carolina, and arrives at the Orphan-houſe in December. 242, 243
Proſperous ſtate of affairs there. — *ibid.*
Judging that a College was much wanted in Georgia, he returns to England, to apply for a charter, ſummer 1765. — — 245
Opens Lady Huntingdon's Chapel at Bath. 246

CHAP. XIX.

Invites Mr. Occum an Indian miniſter to preach at Tottenham-Court Chapel. — 248
Preaches to a numerous company of the nobility at Bath, November 1766. — — 249
Iſſue of his negotiations about the intended College at Georgia, October 1767. — 251
Makes a collection at the Tabernacle for the Society for promoting Religious Knowledge among the Poor. — — 253
Summer, 1768, once more goes to Edinburgh. 254
Miſtreſs Whitefield dies. — — *ibid.*
He opens Lady Huntingdon's Chapel in Wales. *ibid.*
Is in a very poor ſtate of health, yet ſtill continues to preach. — — 255
Next ſummer (1769) preaches more frequently. *ibid.*
He opens Lady Huntingdon's Chapel at Tunbridge. — — — 256

In

In September, embarks the seventh and last time for America. — — Page 256

CHAP. XX.

Extracts from his Journal before he left the Downs. 257—262
Is very happy to see matters exceeding his most sanguine expectations at the Orphan-house; and the colony so greatly increased. — 263
The Governor, Council, and Assembly of Georgia, express their gratitude to him as a benefactor to the colony, in the most respectful terms. 263—265
His health grows better; and he preaches almost every day. — — — 265
Goes to the northern colonies to preach in the summer season, and proposes to return to his Orphan-house in winter. — — 266
While preaching daily in New-England, is taken very ill about the middle of September; but being recovered continues in the same course, and hopes to see Georgia about Christmas. 268, 269.
Dies at Newbury-Port, Sabbath morning, September 30, 1770. — — — 270
Mr. Smith's account of his death and funeral. 270—275
Reception of the news at London. — 276, 277

CHAP. XXI.

Description of his person. — 279
Striking parts of his life and character. 280—291

Extracts from his Funeral Sermons preached in America:—by the Rev. Mr. Parsons of Newbury, Sep-

September 30; with a letter, giving an account of the interment. — Page 292—301
Dr. Pemberton's of Boſton, Oct. 11. 302—310
Mr. Ellington's at Savannah, Nov. 11. 310—317

Extracts from his Funeral Sermons preached in England:—by the Rev. Mr. D. Edwards, November 11. — — 317—321
Mr. John Weſley, November 18. 321—327
Mr. Venn, November 25. — 329—336
Reference to ſeveral others. — *ibid.*

Extract from the Rev. Mr. Joſiah Smith's Sermon upon Mr. Whitefield, in 1740; to ſhew the uniformity of his conduct from that early period of his miniſtry till his death. — 339—341
Mr. Newton's manuſcript Funeral Sermon. 341—346

Concluſion referring to other Sermons. *ibid.*

His Will. — — 347—355

Preſent ſupply of Tabernacle and Chapel. 356, 357

MEMOIRS OF THE LIFE

OF THE

Rev. Mr. GEORGE WHITEFIELD.

CHAP. I.

From his Birth, to his going to the Univerſity of Oxford, *Anno* 1732.

THIS eminent and pious ſervant of *Chriſt*, Mr. *George Whitefield*, was born at *Glouceſter*, on the ſixteenth day of *December*, O. S. 1714. His father, *Thomas Whitefield*, nephew of the Rev. Mr. *Samuel Whitefield* of *Rockhampton*, in *Glouceſterſhire (a)*, was firſt bred to the employment of a

(a) The Rev. Mr. *Samuel Whitefield*, great-grandfather of *George*, was born at *Wantage* in *Berkſhire*, and was rector of *North Ledyard* in *Wiltſhire*. He removed afterwards to *Rockhampton*. He had five daughters, two of whom were married to clergymen, Mr. *Perkins* and Mr. *Lovingham:* And two ſons, *Samuel*, who ſucceeded his father in the cure of *Rockhampton*, and died without iſſue; and *Andrew*, who was a private gentleman, and lived retired upon his eſtate. *Andrew* had fourteen children, of whom *Thomas* was the eldeſt, the father of Mr. *George Whitefield.*

wine merchant in *Briſtol*; but afterwards kept an Inn in the city of *Glouceſter*. In *Briſtol* he married Miſtreſs *Elizabeth Edwards*, who was related to the *Blackwells* and the *Dimours* of that city; by whom he had ſix ſons and one daughter *(b)*. Of theſe, *George* was the youngeſt, who being bereaved of his father, when only two years old, was regarded by his mother with a peculiar tenderneſs, and educated with more than ordinary care.

He was early under religious impreſſions; but the bent of his nature, and the general courſe of his younger years, as himſelf acknowledges *(c)* with expreſſions of ſhame and ſelf-condemnation, was of a very different kind.

Between the years of twelve and fifteen, he made a good progreſs in the *Latin* Claſſics, at the public ſchool: and his eloquence began to appear, even at that early period, in the ſpeeches which he delivered at the annual viſitations. It is probable the applauſe he received on theſe occaſions, con-

(b) Elizabeth, the daughter, was twice reputably married at *Briſtol*. *John*, his ſon, lies interred with the family in St. *Mary Decrypt* Church in *Glouceſter*. *Joſeph* died an infant. *Andrew* ſettled in trade at *Briſtol*, and died in the twenty-eighth year of his age. *James* was captain of a ſhip, and died ſuddenly at *Bath*. *Thomas* and *Richard* are ſtill living. The father died *December* 1716. The mother continued a widow ſeven years, and was then married to Mr. *Longden*, an ironmonger in *Glouceſter*, by whom ſhe had no iſſue. She died *December* 1751, in the ſeventy-firſt year of her age.

(c) See the two firſt parts of his Life at the beginning. Confeſſions of a like nature, are to be found in the writings of St. *Auguſtin*.

tributed to his fondneſs for theatrical amuſements: From whence it has been inſinuated that he learned his oratory upon the ſtage. This, however, ſeems to have no other foundation, than his acting a part ſometimes with his fellow-ſcholars; particularly, in certain dramatic performances prepared for them by their maſter: For that he was more indebted as an orator to nature, than to art of any kind, muſt be evident to all perſons of diſcernment who were acquainted with him. Such could not fail to obſerve, that his eloquence was in a great meaſure the effect of his genius, and proceeded chiefly from that peculiar aſſemblage of extraordinary talents with which GOD had endowed him.

Notwithſtanding this, it appears from his conduct, that he either had not yet diſcovered where his talents lay, or could not find means to qualify himſelf for entering into any profeſſion where they might be properly exerciſed: for when he was about fifteen years of age, he declined the purſuit of learning, and talked of getting an education that would better fit him for buſineſs. During this period, he ſtill continued to reſide with his mother; and as her circumſtances were not then ſo eaſy as before, he did not ſcruple to aſſiſt her in the buſineſs of the tavern. But the prevailing bent of his genius began now ſtrongly to diſcover itſelf; for even in this unfavourable ſituation he compoſed ſeveral ſermons, one of which he dedicated to his eldeſt brother: And

after having viſited him at *Briſtol*, he came home with a reſolution to abandon his preſent employment, and to turn his thoughts a different way.

After this, being for ſome time diſengaged from every purſuit, and but poorly ſupported out of his mother's ſcanty ſubſiſtence, he was in no ſmall danger of being utterly ruined by the influence of his former companions: but it pleaſed GOD to break the ſnare, by filling him with an abhorrence of their evil deeds.

About this time, the impreſſions of religion began again to recover their influence in his breaſt: And when he was ſeventeen years of age he received the ſacrament of the Lord's Supper. He now became more and more watchful, both over his heart and converſation. He was frequently employed in faſting and prayer; ſpent much of his time in reading books of devotion; attended public worſhip twice every day; and ſo deeply was he engaged in theſe exerciſes, that his thoughts were conſtantly ſet on the great things of religion.

CHAP. II.

From the Time of his going to the Univerſity of Oxford, *to his embarking for* Georgia, *Anno* 1737.

WHEN Mr. *Whitefield* arrived at eighteen, he was ſent to the univerſity of *Oxford*, where he was again expoſed to the ſociety of the wicked: But remembering his former danger and deliverance, by the grace of God, he reſiſted all their ſollicitations, and cultivated an acquaintance with the Methodiſts, as the only perſons that ſeemed to preſerve a ſenſe of religion, through the whole of their deportment.

It would be going beyond our purpoſe to give an account of the riſe of Methodiſm: For this, the reader is referred to the Rev. Mr. *John Weſtley*'s firſt Journal. But it may not be improper to notice the ſpirit of the age, when it firſt appeared. At that time, ſerious and practical chriſtianity in *England* was in a very low condition; ſcriptural, experimental religion, (which in the laſt century uſed to be the ſubject of the ſermons and writings of the clergy) was become quite unfaſhionable; and the only thing inſiſted on was a defence of the out-works of chriſtianity againſt the objections of infidels. What was the conſequence? The writings of infidels multiplied every day, and infidelity made a rapid progreſs among perſons of every rank, not becauſe they were reaſoned into

it by the force of argument, but becauſe they were kept ſtrangers to *Chriſt* and the power of the Goſpel. We have a moſt affecting deſcription of this, by Biſhop *Butler*, whom none will ſuſpect of exaggerating the fact: *(d)* " It is come, I know " not how, to be taken for granted, by many " perſons, that chriſtianity is not ſo much as a " ſubject of inquiry; but that it is, now at " length, diſcovered to be fictitious; and ac- " cordingly they treat it, as if in the preſent age, " this were an agreed point among all people of " diſcernment; and nothing remained but to ſet " it up as a principal ſubject of mirth and ridi- " cule; as it were by way of repriſals, for it's " having ſo long interrupted the pleaſures of the " world." Such was the ſtate of religion in *England*, and *Scotland* was greedily ſwallowing down the poiſon, when it pleaſed GOD to raiſe up the Methodiſts, as inſtruments to revive his work in the midſt of abounding impiety, and to bring multitudes who had ſcarcely a form of godlineſs, to experience it's quickening and renewing power.

Happy was it for Mr. *Whitefield*, that there was a Society of Methodiſts, at that time, in *Oxford*; but eſpecially that he became acquainted with the Rev. Mr. *Charles Weſley*, by whom he was treated with particular kindneſs. Such benefit did he receive under his miniſtry, that he always accounted

(*d*) Preface to his Analogy, *May* 1736.

him

him his ſpiritual father. And Mr. *Weſley*'s reciprocal affection for him, ſtands recorded in the verſes at the beginning of Mr. *Whitefield*'s ſecond and third Journals.

Like the other Methodiſts, Mr. *Whitefield* now began to live by rule, and to improve every moment of his time to the beſt advantage. He received the communion every ſabbath, viſited the ſick, and the jail priſoners, and read to the poor. For daring to be thus ſingularly religious, he ſoon incurred the diſpleaſure of his fellow-ſtudents, and felt the effects of it in their unkind behaviour. In the mean time, he was greatly diſtreſſed with melancholy thoughts, which were augmented by exceſſive bodily auſterities. And at laſt, by reading, and perhaps miſunderſtanding ſome myſtic writers, he was driven to imagine, that the beſt method he could take, was to ſhut himſelf up in his ſtudy, till he had perfectly mortified his own will, and was enabled to do good without any mixture of corrupt motives. He likewiſe imagined, that he muſt relinquiſh external duties, and public worſhip, and laſtly, (which was no ſmall trial and affliction to him) that he muſt deny himſelf the pleaſure of converſing with his religious friends. In this pitiable ſtate of mind, Mr. *Charles Weſley* found him one day, when he went to ſee him; apprized him of his danger, if he perſiſted in that way of life, and recommended to him his brother as a perſon of greater experience; who readily gave him, from time to time, his friendly

advice. Soon after this, however, he carried his abſtinence and faſting to ſuch an extreme, that his body was ſo emaciated, and feeble, that he could hardly walk up ſtairs. His tutor therefore thought proper to call a phyſician, and it appeared by the event, he had rightly judged in doing ſo: for it pleaſed GOD to make the phyſician's care and medicines ſucceſsful to his recovery.

His bodily health being reſtored, his ſoul was likewiſe filled with peace and joy in believing on the Son of GOD. This joy was ſo great for ſome time, that go where he would, he could not help praiſing GOD continually in his heart, and with ſome difficulty reſtrained himſelf from doing it aloud. As he was urged to go into the country for confirming his health, he returned to his native air at *Glouceſter*, where (his mind being now happily enlightened) he preferred the ſacred writings to all other books, and read them with conſtant prayer; in which exerciſe he found unſpeakable delight and benefit. But inclination conſpired with duty, to hinder him from confining his religion to himſelf: Having a heart formed for ſociety and friendſhip, he could not think of ſhutting himſelf up in his cloſet; but made it his buſineſs to converſe with young perſons, about his own time of life, in order to awaken them to a ſenſe of religion. GOD was pleaſed ſoon to give ſucceſs to his endeavours this way; for ſeveral of them joined with him, and notwithſtanding the contempt they knew it would bring upon them,

them, met together from time to time for religious exercises. He also there read to some poor people in the town, twice or thrice a week, and read and prayed with the prisoners in the county gaol every day.

Being now about twenty-one years of age, he was sent for by Doctor *Benson*, Bishop of *Gloucester*; who told him, That though he had purposed to ordain none under three-and-twenty, yet he should reckon it his duty to ordain him whenever he applied. Upon which, at the earnest persuasion of his friends, he prepared for taking orders.

His behaviour on this occasion was very exemplary. He first studied the Thirty-nine Articles, that he might be satisfied of their being agreeable to Scripture. Then, he examined himself by the qualifications of a minister mentioned in the New Testament, and by the questions that he knew were to be put to him at his ordination. On the *Saturday*, he was much in prayer for himself and those who were to be ordained with him. On the morning of his ordination, (which was at *Gloucester*, *Sunday*, *June* 20, 1736) he rose early, and again read, with prayer, St. *Paul*'s Epistles to *Timothy*, and after his ordination, went to the Lord's Table.

The *Sunday* following, he preached his Sermon on *The Necessity and Benefit of Religious Society*, to a very crowded auditory; and that same week he set out for *Oxford*, whither he inclined to go,

rather than to the parish which the Bishop would have given him; because it was the place where he might best prosecute his studies, and where he hoped his labours might be most useful *(e)*. Soon after this, he was invited to officiate at the chapel of the Tower of *London*. The first time he preached in *London*, was *August* 1736, at *Bishopsgate* Church. Having a very young look, the people were surprised at his appearance, and seemed to sneer as he went up to the pulpit; but they had not heard him long, when their contempt was turned into esteem, and their smiles into grave attention. He continued at the Tower two months, preaching, catechising, and visiting the soldiers; and several serious young men came to hear his

(e) "Last *Sunday* in the afternoon, I preached my "first Sermon in the church where I was baptized, and "also first received the Sacrament of the Lord's Supper. "Curiosity drew a large congregation together. The "sight, at first, a little awed me. But I was comfort-"ed with a heart-felt sense of the Divine Presence: "And soon found the advantage of having been ac-"customed to public speaking, when a boy at school; "and of exhorting and teaching the prisoners, and "poor people at their private houses, whilst at the uni-"versity. By these means, I was kept from being "daunted over much. As I proceeded, I perceived the "fire kindled, till at last, tho' so young, and amidst a "crowd of those who knew me in my childish days, I "trust, I was enabled to speak with some degree of "Gospel authority. Some few mocked; but most for the "present seemed struck: and I have since heard, that "a complaint had been made to the Bishop, that I drove "fifteen mad, the first sermon. The worthy prelate, "as I am informed, wished that the madness might not "be forgotten, before next *Sunday*." Letter XVI.

morning

morning diſcourſes on the Lord's-day. In the mean time, the letters which the Rev. Meſſieurs *Weſleys* and *Ingham* wrote home from *Georgia*, made him long to go and preach the Goſpel in thoſe parts; yet he waited till Providence ſhould make his way more clear, and returning to *Oxford*, he found himſelf very happy in his former employments, and had much pleaſure in reading *Henry's Commentary on the Bible*, and in the company of ſome religious young men, who met together in his chamber every day.

In *November* 1736, he was again called from *Oxford*, to miniſter at *Dummer* in *Hampſhire*. This was a new ſphere of action among poor illiterate people; but he was ſoon reconciled to it, and thought he reaped no ſmall profit by converſing with them. Nevertheleſs, he continued his ſtudies with unwearied application: Dividing the day into three parts; eight hours for ſleep and meals, eight for public prayers, catechiſing and viſiting; and eight for ſtudy and retirement. During his ſtay here, he was invited to a very profitable curacy in *London*; but did not accept of it, as he was ſtill intent upon going abroad. Providence, at length, ſeemed to open a door to him; for he received letters, containing what he thought to be an invitation, to go to *Georgia*, from Mr. *John Weſley*, whoſe brother came over about this time to procure more labourers. It is eaſy to judge, how readily this propoſal would be embraced: and now that he thought himſelf clearly called,

(many

(many things concurring to make his ſtay at home leſs neceſſary) he ſet his affairs in order, and in *January* 1737, went to take leave of his friends in *Glouceſter* and *Briſtol*. At *Glouceſter*, the congregations when he preached, were very large, and very ſerious. At *Briſtol*, many perſons were forced to return from the churches where he was invited to preach, for want of room. He went alſo to *Bath*, where he was kindly received, and preached twice. But he did not ſtay long at any of theſe places, being obliged to go to *Oxford* about the latter end of *February*; from whence he came up to *London*, to wait upon General *Oglethorp* and the Truſtees for *Georgia*. He was ſoon introduced to the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, and the Biſhop of *London*, who both approved of his going abroad. While he continued at *London*, waiting for General *Oglethorp*, he preached more frequently than he had done before, and greater numbers of people flocked to hear him. But finding that the General was not likely to ſail for ſome time; and being under particular obligations to the Rev. Mr. *Sampſon Harris*, miniſter at *Stonehouſe* in *Glouceſterſhire*, he went at his requeſt, to ſupply his charge, till he ſhould diſpatch ſome affairs in *London*. There he was very happy in his public miniſtrations, but eſpecially in his retirements, which he uſed afterwards to reflect upon with great ſatisfaction *(f)*. On Mr. *Harris*'s

(f) See Letter XXI.

return,

return, he left *Stonehouſe*, and upon repeated invitations went a ſecond time to *Briſtol*, where he preached as uſual about five times a week. Here the multitudes of his hearers ſtill increaſed (*g*). He was attended by perſons of all ranks and denominations; private religious ſocieties were erected; a collection for the poor priſoners in *Newgate*, was made twice or thrice a week; and large encouragement was offered to him, if he would not go abroad.—During his ſtay at *Briſtol*, which was from the end of *May* to the twenty-firſt of *June*, he paid a ſecond ſhort viſit to *Bath*, where the people crowded, and were ſeriouſly affected as at *Briſtol*, and no leſs than 160*l.* was collected for the poor of *Georgia*.

June 21, he preached his farewell-ſermon at *Briſtol*; and towards the end of the diſcourſe, when he came to tell them, "it might be they would ſee him no more," the whole congregation was exceedingly affected; high and low, young and old, burſt into a flood of tears. Multitudes, after ſermon, followed him home weeping; and the next day he was employed from ſeven in the morning till midnight, in talking and giving advices to thoſe who came to him, about the concerns of their ſouls and ſalvation.

(*g*) "Some hung upon the rails, others climbed up "the leads of the church, and all together made the church "itſelf ſo hot, with their breath, that the ſteam would "fall from the pillars like drops of rain." *Ibid.*

From

From *Briſtol* he went to *Glouceſter*, and preached to a very crowded auditory; and after ſtaying a few days went on to *Oxford*, where he had an agreeable interview with the other Methodiſts, and came to *London* about the end of *Auguſt*.

Here he was invited to preach and aſſiſt in adminiſtering the ſacrament in a great many churches. The congregations continually increaſed; and generally on the Lord's-days, he uſed to preach four times to very large and very much affected auditories, and to walk ten or twelve miles in going to the different churches. His friends began to be afraid he would hurt himſelf: but he uſed to ſay, "He found, by experience, the more he did, the more he might do for God."

His name was now put into the news-papers, (though without his conſent or knowledge) as a young gentleman going volunteer to *Georgia*, who was to preach before the ſocieties at their general quarterly meeting. This ſtirred up the people's curioſity more and more. He preached on that occaſion, his ſermon on *Early Piety*, which was printed at the requeſt of the ſocieties. After this, for near three months ſucceſſively, there was no end of people's flocking to hear him, and the managers of the charity-ſchools were continually applying to him to preach (*b*) for the benefit of the children; for that purpoſe they procured the liberty of the churches on other days of the week

(*b*) See Letter XXVIII.

beſides

beſides the Lord's-day; and yet thouſands went away from the largeſt churches, not being able to get in. The congregations were all attention, and ſeemed to hear as for eternity. He preached generally nine times a week, and often adminiſtered the ſacrament early on the Lord's-day morning, when you might ſee the ſtreets filled with people going to church with lanthorns in their hands, and hear them converſing about the things of God.

As his popularity increaſed, oppoſition increaſed proportionably. Some of the clergy became angry; two of them ſent for him, and told him, they would not let him preach in their pulpits any more, unleſs he renounced that part of the preface of his ſermon *on Regeneration*, (lately publiſhed) wherein he wiſhed "that his brethren would entertain "their auditories oftener with diſcourſes upon the "new-birth." Probably ſome of them were irritated the more, by his free converſation with many of the ſerious Diſſenters, who invited him to their houſes, and repeatedly told him, "That "if the doctrines of the new-birth, and juſtifica-"tion by faith, were preached powerfully in the "churches, there would be few Diſſenters in *Eng-*"*land.*" Nor was he without oppoſition even from ſome of his friends. But under theſe diſcouragements, he had great comfort in meeting every evening with a band of religious intimates, to ſpend an hour in prayer, for the advancement of the goſpel, and for all their acquaintance, ſo far as they knew their circumſtances. In this he had uncommon,

common ſatisfaction: once he ſpent a whole night with them in prayer and praiſe; and ſometimes at midnight, after he had been quite wearied with the labours of the day, he found his ſtrength renewed in this exerciſe, which made him compoſe his ſermon *upon Interceſſion.*

The nearer the time of his embarkation approached, the more affectionate and eager the people grew. Thouſands and thouſands of prayers were put up for him. They would run and ſtop him in the alleys of the churches, and follow him with wiſhful looks. But above all, it was hardeſt for him to part with his weeping friends at *St. Dunſtan*'s, where he helped to adminiſter the ſacrament to them, after ſpending the night before in prayer: This parting was to him almoſt inſupportable.

CHAP.

CHAP. III.

From the Time of his embarking for Georgia, *to his re-embarking for* England, 1738.

IN the latter end of *December*, 1737, he embarked for *Georgia*. (*i*) This was to him a new, and at firſt appearance, a very unpromiſing ſcene. The ſhip was full of ſoldiers, and there were near twenty women among them. The captains, both of the ſoldiers and ſailors, with the ſurgeon, and a young cadet, gave him ſoon to underſtand, that they looked upon him as an impoſtor, and for a while treated him as ſuch. The firſt Lord's-day, one of them played on the hautboy, and nothing was to be ſeen but cards, and little heard, but curſing and blaſphemy. This was a very diſagreeable ſituation; but it is worth while to obſerve, with what prudence he was helped to behave among them, and how God was pleaſed to bleſs his patient and perſevering endeavours to do them good.

He began with the officers in the cabin, in the way of mild and gentle reproof; but this had lit-

(*i*) Here begins a manuſcript of Mr. *Whitefield*'s, from which ſeveral paſſages are taken in the following account. It is referred to by M. S.

tle effect (*k*). He therefore tried what might be done between decks, among the ſoldiers. And though the place was not very commodious, he read prayers and expounded twice a day. At firſt he could not ſee any fruit of his labour, yet it was encouraging to find it ſo kindly received by his new red-coat pariſhioners, (as he calls them) many of whom ſubmitted chearfully to be catechiſed about the leſſons they had heard expounded.

In this ſituation things continued for ſome time. But all this while, he had no place for retirement, and there was no divine ſervice in the great cabin, both which he greatly deſired. At laſt he obtained his wiſh: one day finding the ſhip captain a little inclined to favour him, he aſked him to ſuffer him now and then to retire into the round-houſe, where the captain ſlept, and offered him money for the loan of it. The captain would not take the money, but readily granted his requeſt. Soon afterwards, the military captain, having invited him to a diſh of coffee, he took the liberty to tell him, "That though he was a volunteer on board, yet "as he was on board, he looked upon himſelf as "his chaplain, and as ſuch, he thought it a little "odd, to pray and preach to the ſervants, and

(*k*) "I could do no more for a ſeaſon, than whilſt I "was writing, now and then turn my head by way of "reproof, to a Lieutenant of the ſoldiers, who ſwore as "though he was born of a ſwearing conſtitution. Now "and then, he would take the hint, return my nod "with a, 'Doctor, I aſk your pardon,' and then to his "cards and ſwearing again." M. S.

" not to the maſter;" and added withal, " That " if he thought proper, he would make uſe of a " ſhort collect now and then, to him, and the " other gentlemen in the great cabin." After pauſing a while, and ſhaking his head, he anſwered, " I think we may, when we have nothing " elſe to do." This aukward hint was all he got for the preſent; yet he was encouraged thereby to hope, that the deſired point would be ſoon gained.

They were detained in the *Downs*, by contrary winds, for near a month; the ſoldiers on board became by this time more and more civilized, and the people at *Deal* heard him gladly. There he preached thrice, at the invitation of the miniſters, and often expounded in the houſe where he lodged. This work was very delightful to him; but he was ſuddenly called away by a fair wind, about the end of *January*, 1738, juſt after he had preached in *Upper-Deal* church.

Being returned to the ſhip, he began to comfort himſelf with ſome promiſing appearances of doing good in the great cabin. As he had no better place, he generally every night retired with his friend Mr. *Haberſham*, and his brother, and two ſervants, behind the round-houſe, for prayer and other religious exerciſes. Sometimes, he perceived Captain *Whiting* was hearkening within. One day, finding on the Captain's pillow the *Independent Whig*, he exchanged it for a book entitled, *The Self-Deceiver*. Next morning the Captain

came ſmiling, and enquired who made that exchange; Mr. *Whitefield* confeſſed the charge, and begged his acceptance of the book, which he ſaid he had read, and liked very well. From thenceforward, a viſible alteration was ſeen in him. The other Captain alſo, about the ſame time, met him as he was coming from between decks, and deſired, "that they might have public ſervice and "expounding twice a-day in the great cabin."

In about a fortnight, they reached *Gibraltar*, whither they were bound to take in ſome more ſoldiers. There, one Major *Sinclair* had been ſo kind as to provide a lodging for him unaſked, who, with the other military gentlemen, even Governor *Sabine*, and general *Columbine*, received him moſt courteouſly. Being apprehenſive, that at a public military table, he might be more than hoſpitably entertained, by way of prevention, he begged leave to remind his Excellency of an obſervation made in the book of *Eſther*, on the court of the great *Ahaſuerus*, "That none did "compel." He took the hint, and genteely replied, "That no compulſion of any kind ſhould "be uſed at his table." And every thing was carried on with great decorum. The officers attended at public worſhip with order and gravity; the miniſters alſo behaved with great civility; and all concurred to give him invitations to preach, which he did twice or thrice in the week; (*l*) and in

(*l*) "Strange and unuſual was the ſcene, both with "reſpect to the place and people. The adjacent pro-"montories,

in the evenings and mornings, when not on board, he expounded, converſed and prayed with a religious ſociety of ſoldiers, who had liberty from the Governor to aſſemble at any time in the church. His evening expoſitions were attended, not only by the ſoldiers, but by officers, miniſters and towns-people; and from all that could be judged, his labours were not without the divine bleſſing.

Finding another ſociety of religious ſoldiers there, belonging to the Church of *Scotland*, he ſent them, as well as the former, ſome proper books, talked with ſeveral of them, and endeavoured to unite both ſocieties together; urging on them the neceſſity of a catholic, diſintereſted love, and of joining in prayer for the advancement of the kingdom of *Chriſt*. This exhortation alſo, by the bleſſing of God, had a good effect; and two or three of the latter ſociety being draughted out for *Georgia*, deſired leave to go in the ſhip with Mr. *Whitefield*, which was readily allowed them.

Before the embarkation of the ſoldiers, by the General's conſent, he gave them a parting diſcourſe in the church. And after embarkation, from time to time, as the weather permitted, he preached to

" montories, and the largeneſs of the rock of *Gibraltar*, " helped me to enlarge my ideas of Him, who *in his* " *ſtrength ſetteth faſt the mountains, and is girded about with* " *power*. And the place being, as it were, a public " rendezvous of all nations, I thought I ſaw the world " in epitome." *M. S.*

them on board their reſpective ſhips (*m*). Colonel *Cochran*, who commanded, was extremely civil: and ſoon after their ſetting ſail, there was ſuch a change upon Captain *Mackay*, that he deſired Mr. *Whitefield* would not give himſelf the trouble of expounding and praying in the cabin, and between decks; for he would order a drum to be beat morning and evening, and himſelf would attend with the ſoldiers on the deck. This produced a very agreeable alteration; they were now as regular as in a church. Mr. *Whitefield* preached with a captain on each ſide of him, and ſoldiers all around; and the two other ſhips companies, being now in the trade winds, drew near, and joined in the worſhip of God. The great cabin was now become a *Bethel*; both Captains were daily more and more affected; and a crucified Saviour, and the things pertaining to the kingdom of God, were the uſual topics of their converſation. Once, after public ſermon, Captain *Mackay* deſired the ſoldiers to ſtop, whilſt he informed them, that to his great ſhame, he had been a notorious ſwearer himſelf, but by the inſtrumentality of that gentleman, pointing to Mr. *Whitefield*, he had now left it off, and exhorted them, for *Chriſt*'s ſake, that they would go and do likewiſe. The children

(*m*) He not only preached to them; but gave them notice, that he intended ſpeaking to them, one by one, to ſee what account they could give of their faith.—*Ibid.* At this time he began his "Obſervations on ſelect Paſſages of Scripture turned into Catechetical Queſtions," printed in Vol. IV. of his Works.

were

were catechiſed; there was a reformation throughout the whole ſoldiery. The women cried, "What "a change in our Captain." The bad books and packs of cards, which Mr. *Whitefield* exchanged for bibles, and other religious books, (abundance of which were given him to diſperſe by the *Society for promoting Chriſtian Knowledge)* were now thrown over board; and a fever, that prevailed in general through the whole ſhip, helped to make the impreſſions ſink deeper. For many days and nights, he viſited betwixt twenty and thirty ſick perſons, crawling between decks upon his knees, adminiſtring medicines or cordials to them, and ſuch advice as ſeemed ſuitable to their circumſtances. The ſailors did not eſcape the fever; Captain *Whiting* gladly went with them to viſit them. One of them in particular, who had been a moſt notorious ſcoffer, ſent for him in a bitter agony, crying out upon and lamenting his wicked life. The Cadet, who was a cabin paſſenger, being alſo ſeized, was wounded deeply, told Mr. *Whitefield* the hiſtory of his life, and informed Captain *Mackay* of his deſire to leave the army, and to return to his original intention (having had an univerſity education) of devoting himſelf to the ſervice of the church of God. Mr. *Whitefield* himſelf was alſo ſeized, but by the bleſſing of God, he ſoon recovered, and was ſtrong enough, in about a week, to come out to the burial of the Cook of the ſhip, who had boaſted, "That he "would be wicked till two years before he died,

" and then he would be good." But he was ſuddenly taken ill, and died in about ſix hours (*n*).

It was the beginning of *May*, when they drew near to land. After preaching his farewell-ſermon, he arrived at the parſonage-houſe at *Savannah*, *May* 7, 1738, about four months after his firſt embarkation at *Deptford*.

Upon this voyage (many years after) he made the following reflection: " A long, and, I truſt, " not altogether unprofitable voyage. What ſhall " I render to the Lord for all his mercies? Be- " ſides being ſtrengthened to go through my pub- " lic work, I was enabled to write letters, and " compoſe ſermons, as though I had been on " land. Even at this diſtance of time, the re- " membrance of the happy hours I enjoyed in re- " ligious exerciſes on the deck, is refreſhing to my " ſoul. And though nature ſometimes relented " at being taken from my friends, and little un- " uſual inconveniencies of a ſea-life; yet, a con- " ſciouſneſs that I had in view the glory of God, " and the good of ſouls, from time to time af- " forded me unſpeakable ſatisfaction (*o*)."

One Mr. *Delamot*, who had gone volunteer with Mr. *John Weſley*, and was left behind by him as ſchoolmaſter at *Savannah*, received Mr. *Whitefield* at the parſonage-houſe, which he found much

(*n*) " This was the only adult, except a ſoldier (who " had killed himſelf at *Gibraltar* by perpetual drinking) " that died out of all that were on board." *M. S.*

(*o*) *M. S.*

better

better than expectation. Here ſome ſerious perſons, the fruits of Mr. *Weſley*'s miniſtry, ſoon came to ſee him. On the morrow he read prayers, and expounded in the court-houſe, and waited upon the magiſtrates; but being taken ill, he was confined for above a week with a fever and ague.

When he was recovered, and able to look about him, he found every thing bore the aſpect of an infant colony: and, what was more diſcouraging ſtill, he ſaw it was likely to continue ſo, by the very nature of its conſtitution. "The people "(ſays he) were denied the uſe both of rum and "ſlaves. The lands were allotted them, accord-"ing to a particular plan, whether good or bad; "and the female heirs prohibited from inheriting. "So that in reality, to place people there on ſuch "a footing, was little better than to tye their legs "and bid them walk. The ſcheme was well "meant at home; but, as too many years expe-"rience evidently proved, was abſolutely impracticable in ſo hot a country abroad. However, "that rendered what I had brought over from my "friends, more acceptable to the poor inhabi-"tants, and gave me an ocular demonſtration, "which was what I wanted, when the hint was "given (*p*) of the great neceſſity and promiſing

(*p*) "It was firſt propoſed to me by my dear friend "Mr. *Charles Weſley*, who, with General *Oglethorpe*, had "concerted a ſcheme for carrying on ſuch a deſign, be-"fore I had any thoughts of going abroad myſelf." Vol. III. p. 463.

" utility of a future orphan-houſe, which I now " determined, by the divine aſſiſtance, to ſet about " in earneſt. The *Saltzburghers* at *Ebenezer*, I " found had one; and having heard and read of " what Profeſſor *Franck* had done in that way in " *Germany*, I confidently hoped that ſomething of " the like nature might be owned, and ſucceeded " in *Georgia*. Many poor orphans were there al- " ready, and the number was likely ſoon to in- " creaſe.

" As opportunity offered, I viſited *Frederica*, and " the adjacent villages, and often admired, con- " ſidering the circumſtances and diſpoſition of the " firſt ſettlers, that ſo much was really done. " The ſettlers were chiefly broken and decayed " tradeſmen from *London* and other parts of *Eng-* " *land*; and ſeveral *Scotch* adventurers; ſome " highlanders, who had a worthy miniſter, named " *Macleod*; a few Moravians; and the *Saltz-* " *burghers*, who were by far the moſt induſtrious " of the whole. With the worthy miniſters of " *Ebenezer*, Meſſrs. *Grenaw* and *Boltzius*, I con- " tracted an intimacy. Many praying people " were in the congregation, which, with the con- " ſideration that ſo many charitable people in *Eng-* " *land* had been ſtirred up to contribute to *Georgia*, " and ſuch faithful labourers as Meſſrs. *Weſleys* " and *Ingham* had been ſent, gave me great hopes, " that, unpromiſing as the aſpect at preſent might " be, the colony might emerge in time out of its " infant ſtate. Some ſmall advances Mr. *Ingham*

" had

" had made towards converting the *Indians*, who " were at a ſmall ſettlement about four miles from " *Savannah*. He went and lived among them for " a few months, and began to compoſe an *Indian* " grammar; but he was ſoon called away to *Eng-* " *land*; and the *Indians* (who were only ſome " run-away *Creeks*) were in a few years ſcattered " or dead. Mr. *Charles Weſley* had chiefly acted " as ſecretary to General *Oglethorpe*, but he ſoon " alſo went to *England* to engage more labourers; " and not long after, his brother, Mr. *John Weſley*, " having met with unworthy treatment, both at " *Frederica* and *Georgia*, ſoon followed. All this " I was apprized of, but think it moſt prudent " not to repeat grievances. Through divine " mercy, I met with reſpectful treatment from " magiſtrates, officers, and people. The firſt I " viſited now and then, the others, beſides preach- " ing twice a day, and four times of a Lord's-day, " I viſited from houſe to houſe: I was, in general, " moſt cordially received; but from time to time " found, that ' *Cælum non animum mutant, qui* " *trans mare currunt*:' Though lowered in their " circumſtances, a ſenſe of what they formerly " were in their native country, remained. It was " plain to be ſeen, that coming over was not ſo " much out of choice, as conſtraint: chooſing ra- " ther to be poor in an unknown country abroad, " than beholden to relations, or live among thoſe " who knew them in more affluent circumſtances " at home. Among ſome of theſe, the event

" how-

" however, proved, that the word took effectual " root. I was really happy in my little foreign " cure, and could have cheerfully remained among " them, had I not been obliged to return to " *England*, to receive prieſt's orders, and make a " beginning towards laying a foundation to the " Orphan-houſe.—And thus the place I intended " to hide myſelf in, became, through my being " obliged to return for theſe purpoſes, a means " of increaſing that popularity which was already " begun, but which by me was abſolutely un- " foreſeen, and as abſolutely undeſigned (*q*)."

About the middle of *Auguſt*, having ſettled one that came with him as ſchoolmaſter in a neighbouring village, and left his friend Mr. *Haberſham* at *Savannah*, after an affectionate parting with his flock, he ſet out for *Charleſtown*, in *South-Carolina*.

Here he paid his firſt viſit to Commiſſary *Garden*, and at his entreaty preached the next *Sunday* morning and evening, in a grand church reſembling one of the new churches in *London*. The inhabitants ſeemed at his firſt coming up to deſpiſe his youth; but their countenances were altered before worſhip was over. Mr. *Garden*

(*q*) " During my ſtay there, the weather was moſt " intenſely hot, ſometimes burning me almoſt through " my ſhoes. Seeing others do it who were as unable, " I determined to enure myſelf to hardineſs, by lying " conſtantly on the ground; which by uſe, I found to " be ſo far from being a hardſhip, that afterwards it " became ſo, to lie on a bed." *M. S.*

thanked

thanked him moſt cordially, and apprized him of the ill treatment Mr. *Weſley* had met with in *Georgia*, and aſſured him, that were the ſame arbitrary proceedings to commence againſt him, he would defend him with his life and fortune. He alſo ſaid ſomething about the colony of *Georgia* that much encouraged him, as if he thought its flouriſhing was not very far off; and that *Charleſtown* was fifteen times bigger now, than when he (Mr. *Garden*) firſt came there.

CHAP.

CHAP. IV.

From his embarking at Charleſtown *for* London, *to his preaching firſt in* Moorfields, 1739.

SEPTEMBER 6, 1738, Mr. *Whitefield* embarked in a ſhip bound from *Charles-Town* to *London*. They had a very uncomfortable paſſage. For near a fortnight, they were beat about not far from the bar; they were ſoon reduced to an allowance of water; and the ſhip itſelf was quite out of repair. They were alſo very poorly off for proviſions. When they were about a third part of their paſſage, they met with a *Jamaica* man who had plenty of every thing. He ſent for Mr. *Whitefield* on board, and offered him a moſt commodious birth; but he did not think it right to leave his ſhip-mates in diſtreſs, and therefore returned to his own ſhip, with ſuch things as they were pleaſed to give him. The remaining part of the voyage was ſtill more perilous. The only thing comfortable, was, that in the midſt of theſe trials, deep impreſſions were made on ſome that were on board. All conſtantly attended public worſhip twice, and ſome thrice a day. Once the Captain cried out, "Lord, break this hard heart "of mine." Others were impreſſed: particularly

ly one Captain *Gladman*, a paſſenger, on whom a great change was wrought, and afterwards, at his own earneſt requeſt, became Mr. *Whitefield*'s fellow-traveller. At length, after nine weeks toſſing and beating to and fro, they found themſelves in *Limerick* harbour *(r)*.

At *Limerick*, Biſhop *Burſcough* received him very kindly, and engaged him to preach in the cathedral, the good effects of which he heard of many years after. From thence he went to *Dublin*, where he preached, and was courteouſly received by Dr. *Delany*, Biſhop *Rundel*, and Archbiſhop *Bolton*, who had heard of him from a gentleman of *Gibraltar*. And after a paſſage of twenty-four hours from *Dublin*, he arrived at *Park-gate*, *Thurſday*, *November* 30, preached twice on the Lord's-day at *Mancheſter*, and came to *London* the *Friday* following, *December* 8.

Here, he had a conference with the *Moravian* brethren, who were lately come to *London*; and tho' he could not directly fall in with their way of expreſſing themſelves, yet he heartily agreed with them in the old Proteſtant Doctrine of Juſtification in the ſight of God, by Faith alone in the imputed righteouſneſs of *Chriſt*; and was not a little

(*r*) "I wiſh I could never forget what I felt, when "water, and other proviſions, were brought us from "aſhore. One Mr. *Mac Mahon*, a country gentleman, "came from his ſeat at midnight, on purpoſe to relieve "us, and moſt kindly invited me, tho' unknown, to "his houſe, to ſtay as long as I pleaſed." M. S. and Journals.

delighted

delighted to find a great increaſe of the work of GOD, both as to light and love, doctrine and practice, through the inſtrumentality of Mr. *Charles*, and eſpecially of Mr. *John Weſley*.

Some of the clergy now began to ſhew their diſpleaſure more and more; ſo that in two days time, five churches were denied him. And tho' the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, and the Biſhop of *London*, both received him civilly, it was but coldly: And the latter enquired, "Whether his "Journals were not a little tinctured with enthuſiaſm?" He replied, That they were written only for himſelf, and private friends, and were publiſhed entirely without his conſent, or knowledge, or ſo much as his conſent being aſked at all *(s)*.

The

(s) It was certainly wrong to publiſh them, without his conſent and reviſal; otherwiſe, the publication of them was a very proper way to prevent the miſrepreſentation of facts, either by calumny and detraction on the one hand, or by exaggeration on the other. And it is a great pity he did not continue them. They would have been the beſt poſſible memoirs of his life. But we ſee how the offence given by, or taken at, ſome paſſages, might help to determine him "to proceed (as he after-"wards ſays) in a more compendious way." The Journals were, indeed, moſtly written amidſt his inceſſant labours in preaching, travelling, and writing a multitude of letters. And the whole was told with that unguarded ſimplicity, which tho' it charms the candid, and diſpoſes them to forgive or overlook many things, yet gives frequent handle to the critical and ſevere. It muſt alſo be owned, that his unſuſpecting honeſty made him ſometimes receive, with too little caution, the characters of perſons and ſocieties, from thoſe whom he took to be friends of religion, and who, perhaps, were really

The Truſtees for the Colony of *Georgia* received him more cordially, were pleaſed to expreſs their ſatisfaction at the accounts ſent them of his conduct, during his ſtay in the Colony; and being requeſted, by letters ſent unknown to him, from the Magiſtrates and Inhabitants, they moſt willingly preſented him to the Living of *Savannah*, (though he inſiſted upon having no ſalary) and as readily granted him five hundred acres of land, whereon to erect an Orphan-houſe; to collect money for which, together with taking Prieſt's Orders, were the chief motives of his returning to *England* ſo ſoon.

Near a month elapſed, before a board ſat to make him theſe returns. But during that interval, he was not idle. He and his brethren went

really ſo, but were miſinformed. Being therefore convinced, upon ſecond thoughts, that both his Journals, and the two firſt parts of his Life, needed correction, he promiſed a new edition of them, which he accordingly publiſhed in 1756. And in the preface he ingenuouſly acknowledges, that upon a review, he had found "many miſtakes, (which are now rectified) and many "paſſages that were juſtly exceptionable" (which are now eraſed.) And in a note, upon *September* 24, 1740, he ſays, "In my former Journal, taking things by "hearſay too much, I ſpoke and wrote too raſhly, both "of the Colleges and Miniſters of *New England*; for "which, as I have already done when at *Boſton* laſt, "from the pulpit, I take this opportunity of aſking "public pardon from the preſs. It was raſh and un-"charitable, and though well-meant, I fear, did hurt." But theſe corrections, while they ſhew the author's candour and humility, do not affect the hiſtory of his extraordinary labours and ſucceſs in the work of the Goſpel.

on in their uſual courſe, taking hold of every opportunity of doing good, and preaching occaſionally as churches were allowed them (*t*). And tho' the church-wardens and clergy were averſe, yet the common people were rather more eager than ever. But what ſurprized him moſt was, to ſee many of the heads and members of the *London* Societies, (who, by the accounts given by Dr. *Woodward* and *Horneck* (*u*), he thought were founded on a good bottom) make ſuch virulent oppoſition. However, numbers of them were of another mind, and other Societies were ſoon formed in various parts of the town. A large room in *Fetter-lane* was the general place of rendezvous, where they had frequent meetings, and great ſatisfaction in ſocial prayer (*x*). At the ſame time, in the churches that were open, the people crowded, and were affected more than ever. And he and his brethren were ſo much engaged, that for ſome

(*t*) "God gave us a moſt pleaſant Goſpel *Chriſtmas* "ſeaſon, and ſuch a happy beginning of a New Year, "as I had never ſeen before." M. S.

(*u*) See Dr. *Woodward*'s Account of the Riſe and Progreſs of the Religious Societies in the City of *London*, &c.

(*x*) 'It was a Pentecoſt ſeaſon indeed. Some times 'whole nights were ſpent in prayer. Often have we 'been filled as with new wine. And often have I ſeen 'them overwhelmed with the Divine Preſence, and cry-'out, "Will GOD, indeed, dwell with men upon "earth! How dreadful is this place! This is no other "than the houſe of GOD, and the gate of Heaven!" M. S.

days

days he could walk, and preach, and viſit Societies with very little ſleep, and religious exerciſes ſeemed to be their meat and drink.

January 11, 1739, he ſet out for *Oxford*, to receive Prieſt's Orders from his good friend Biſhop *Benſon*, which he did the next Lord's-day; and having preached and adminiſtred the Sacrament at the Caſtle, and preached again in the afternoon, to a crowded congregation, he returned to *London*, *January* 15.

As he had collected ſo much for the Charity-ſchools laſt year, he reaſonably ſuppoſed that the pulpits would not be denied him for the uſe of the *Georgia* Orphan-houſe this year. But the religious concern advancing, and ſpreading more and more, oppoſition alſo increaſed. A pamphlet was publiſhed againſt his ſermon, *On Regeneration*. Several Clergymen made ſtrong objections againſt him and his brethren, for expounding in ſocieties; and ſome people were threatened with proſecution by their pariſh miniſters, for ſuffering them to expound in their houſes. Yet this did not diſcourage either preachers or hearers. The more they were oppoſed, the more they were ſtrengthened. New awakenings were heard of in various parts; and, "What ſhall I do to be ſaved?" was the repeated queſtion of every day.

All the pulpits were not as yet ſhut up: Two or three churches were allowed him to preach in, and to collect for the *Georgia* Orphans, and for erecting a church for the poor *Saltzburghers* at

Ebenezer. One Mr. *Broughton* behaved nobly on this occaſion. Application being made to him, to deny Mr. *Whitefield* his pulpit, he anſwered, "Having got the Lectureſhip of St. *Helen*'s by "Mr. *Whitefield*'s influence; if he inſiſts upon "it, he ſhall have my pulpit." Mr. *Whitefield* did inſiſt upon it, but (Mr. *Broughton* loſing the Lectureſhip) he afterwards blamed himſelf much for his conduct.

In *Briſtol* he had the uſe of the churches for two or three *Sundays*, but ſoon found they would not be open very long. The Dean was not at home: The Chancellor threatened to ſilence and ſuſpend him. In about a fortnight every door was ſhut, except *Newgate*, where he preached, and collected for the poor priſoners, and where people thronged, and were much impreſſed; but this place, alſo, was ſoon ſhut againſt him, by orders from the Mayor.

Before his firſt embarkation for *Georgia*, when he talked of going abroad, numbers in *Briſtol* uſed to reply, "What need of going abroad? "Have we not *Indians* enough at home? If you have a mind to convert *Indians*, there are colliers enough in *Kingſwood*. And before he left *London*, whilſt preaching at *Bermondſey* Church, and ſeeing ſo many thouſands that could not come in, he had a ſtrong inclination to go out and preach to them (though he then uſed notes) upon one of the tombſtones in the church-yard. And this he mentioned to ſome friends, who looked upon the motion,

at firſt, very unfavourably; yet were willing to take it into farther conſideration. At *Briſtol* he thought he had a clear call to try this method. The colliers, he had heard, were very rude, and very numerous; ſo uncultivated, that no body cared to go among them; neither had they any place of worſhip; and often, when provoked, they were a terror to the whole city of *Briſtol*. He therefore looked upon the civilizing of theſe people; and much more, the bringing of them to the profeſſion and practice of chriſtianity, as a matter of great importance *(y)*. After much prayer, and many ſtruggles with himſelf, he one day went to *Hannam* Mount, and ſtanding upon a hill, began to preach to about a hundred colliers, upon *Matt.* v. 1, 2, 3. This ſoon took air. At the ſecond and third time the numbers greatly increaſed, till the congregation, at a moderate computation, amounted to near twenty thouſand. But with what gladneſs and eagerneſs, many of theſe deſpiſed outcaſts, who had never been in a church in their lives, received the word, is above deſcription. "Having (as he writes) no righte-"ouſneſs of their own to renounce, they were "glad to hear of a *Jeſus* who was a friend to pub-"licans, and came not to call the righteous, but "ſinners to repentance. The firſt diſcovery of

(y) "I thought it might be doing the ſervice of my "Creator, who had a mountain for his pulpit, and the "heavens for his ſounding board; and who, when his "Goſpel was refuſed by the *Jews*, ſent his ſervants "into the highways and hedges." M. S.

" their being affected, was to ſee the white gut-
" ters made by their tears, which plentifully fell
" down their black cheeks, as they came out of
" their coal pits. Hundreds and hundreds of
" them were ſoon brought under deep con-
" victions, which (as the event proved) hap-
" pily ended in a ſound and thorough conver-
" ſion. The change was viſible to all, though
" numbers choſe to impute it to any thing, rather
" than the finger of God. As the ſcene was
" quite new, and I had juſt began to be an ex-
" tempore preacher, it often occaſioned many in-
" ward conflicts. Sometimes, when twenty thou-
" ſand people were before me, I had not, in my
" own apprehenſion, a word to ſay, either to
" God or them. But I was never totally deſert-
" ed, and frequently (for to deny it would be
" lying againſt God) ſo aſſiſted, that I knew by
" happy experience, what our Lord meant by
" ſaying, ' out of his belly ſhall flow rivers of
" living water.' The open firmament above me,
" the proſpect of the adjacent fields, with the
" ſight of thouſands and thouſands, ſome in
" coaches, ſome on horſeback, and ſome in the
" trees, and at times all affected and drenched in
" tears together, to which ſometimes was added
" the ſolemnity of the approaching evening,
" was almoſt too much for, and quite overcame
" me *(z)*."

Beſides the colliers, and thouſands from neighbouring villages, perſons of all ranks flocked

(z) M. S.

daily

daily out of *Briſtol*. And he was ſoon invited to preach, by ſome of the better ſort, in a large bowling-green in the city itſelf. Many indeed ſneered, to ſee a ſtripling, with a gown, mount a table, upon what they called unconſecrated ground. And for once, or twice, it excited the contempt and laughter of the higher rank, who formerly were his admirers, when he preached in the churches. But God enabled him to ſtand the laugh, and to preach the Goſpel of *Chriſt* with earneſtneſs and conſtancy; and was pleaſed to attend it with his bleſſing. From all quarters, people flocked under great concern about their ſouls. Sometimes he was employed almoſt from morning to night, giving anſwer to thoſe who came in great diſtreſs, crying out, "What ſhall "we do to be ſaved?" More aſſiſtance was wanted; he therefore wrote to Mr. *John Weſley*, who had never yet been at *Briſtol*, and having received a favourable anſwer, recommended him and his brother, in the ſtrongeſt manner, to the people, and earneſtly prayed that the laſt might be firſt; for he was determined to purſue his ſcheme of the Orphan-houſe, and return again to his retreat at *Georgia*.

Mr. *Weſley* being come, he took an affectionate leave of his friends at *Briſtol*, and made a ſecond excurſion to *Wales*, where an awakening had begun ſome years before, by the inſtrumentality of the Rev. Mr. *Griffith Jones*, and was now carried on by the miniſtry of one Mr. *Howel Harris*, a lay-

man. They met at *Cardiff*, and in company with many others went to *Haſk*, *Ponty-pool*, *Abergavenny*, *Comihoy*, *Carleon*, *Trelex*, and *Newport*, and preached in all theſe places, Mr. *Whitefield* firſt in *Engliſh*, and Mr. *Harris* afterwards in *Welch*, to many thouſands. The ſerious perſons among them, of the Free Grace Diſſenters, rejoiced; but many of high-flying principles, and of another ſtamp, were equally enraged, and expreſſed their diſlike by mockings and threats. All theſe, however, he was enabled to bear with patience, and without the leaſt diſcouragement.

About the 8th of *April*, from *Wales* he went to *Glouceſter*, the place of his birth, where a church was allowed him for once or twice, but no more. However, he preached frequently in *Boothall*, (the place where the judges ſit) and in his brother's field, to many thouſands *(a)*. His concern for his

(a) At the time of Mr. *Whitefield*'s preaching in *Glouceſter*, old Mr. *Cole*, a diſſenting miniſter, uſed to ſay, "Theſe are days of the Son of Man indeed." This Mr. *Cole*, Mr. *Whitefield* when a boy, was taught to ridicule. And being aſked once by one of his congregation, What buſineſs he would be of? He ſaid, "A "miniſter; but he would take care never to tell ſtories "in the pulpit like old *Cole*." About twelve years afterwards, the old man hearing him preach, and tell ſome ſtory to illuſtrate the ſubject he was upon, and having been informed what he had before ſaid, made this remark to one of his elders, "I find that young "*Whitefield* can now tell ſtories, as well as old *Cole*." He was much affected with Mr. *Whitefield*'s preaching, and ſo humble, that he uſed to ſubſcribe himſelf his curate;

his countrymen, his fellow-citizens, and his own relations, made him forget all bodily weakneſs, (to which about this time he was frequently ſubject) and readily to comply with invitations given to preach at *Painſwick*, *Cheltenham*, *Eveſham*, *Badſey*, *Stroud*, *Chafford*, places abounding with inhabitants, and where there is ground to hope, many received much ſpiritual benefit. To wander thus about from place to place; to ſtand in bowling-greens, at market-croſſes, and in highways, eſpecially in his own country, where had he conferred with fleſh and blood, he might have lived at eaſe; to be blamed by friends, and have every evil thing ſpoken againſt him by his enemies; was (eſpecially when his body was weak, and his ſpirits low) very trying; but ſtill he was inwardly ſupported.

April 21. he again went to *Oxford*, and after ſtaying a few days with the Methodiſts there,

curate; and went about preaching after him in the country from place to place. But one evening, whilſt preaching, he was ſtruck with death, and then aſked for a chair to lean on, till he concluded his ſermon, when he was carried up ſtairs, and died Mr. *Whitefield*'s reflection upon this (Letter DXXIII.) is, "O "bleſſed GOD! if it be thy holy will, may my exit be "like his!"

As to Mr. *Whitefield*'s telling ſtories in the pulpit, ſome perhaps may find fault; but beſide, that he had an uncommon fund of paſſages, proper enough to be thus told, and a peculiar talent of telling them; it was certainly, a mean of drawing multitudes to hear him, who would not have attended to the truths of the Goſpel, delivered in the ordinary manner.

came

came to *London*, where he attempted to preach at *Iſlington* Church, the incumbent, Mr. *Stonehouſe*, being a friend to the Methodiſts; but in the midſt of the prayers, the church-warden came, and demanded his licence, or otherwiſe he forbad his preaching in that pulpit. He might, perhaps, have inſiſted on his right to preach, yet for peace ſake he declined; and after the communion ſervice was over, he preached in the church-yard.

Opportunities of preaching in a more regular way being now denied him, and his preaching in the fields being attended with a remarkable bleſſing, he judged it his duty to go on in this practice, and ventured the following *Sunday* into *Moorfields*. Public notice having been given, and the thing being new and ſingular, upon coming out of the coach, he found an incredible number of people aſſembled. Many had told him, that he ſhould never come again out of that place alive. He went in, however, between two of his friends, who by the preſſure of the crowd, were ſoon parted entirely from him, and were obliged to leave him to the mercy of the rabble. But theſe, inſtead of hurting him, formed a lane for him, and carried him along to the middle of the Fields, (where a table had been placed, which was broken in pieces by the crowd) and afterwards back again to the wall that then parted the upper and lower *Moorfields*; from whence he preached without moleſtation, to an exceeding great multitude in the lower Fields. Finding ſuch encouragement, he

went

went that ſame evening to *Kennington-Common*, a large open place, near three miles diſtant from *London*, where he preached to a vaſt multitude, who were all attention, and behaved with as much regularity and quietneſs, as if they had been in a church *(b)*.

(b) "Words cannot well expreſs the glorious diſ-"plays of Divine Grace, which we ſaw, and heard "of, and felt." M. S.

CHAP.

CHAP. V.

From his preaching in Moorfields, *&c. to his laying the Foundation of the Orphan-houſe in* Georgia, 1740.

FOR ſeveral months after this, *Moorfields*, *Kennington-Common*, and *Blackheath*, were the chief ſcenes of action. At a moderate computation, the auditories often conſiſted of above twenty thouſand. It is ſaid their ſinging could be heard two miles off, and his voice near a mile. Sometimes there were upwards of a hundred coaches, beſides waggons, ſcaffolds, and other contrivances, which particular perſons let out for the convenience of the audience. Having no other method to take, he was obliged to collect for the Orphan-houſe in the fields, or not at all, which was humbling to him, and his friends, who aſſiſted him in that work. But the readineſs with which the people gave, and the prayers which they put up when throwing in their mites, were very encouraging (*c*). In the mean while, Mr. *John Weſley* was labouring with great zeal at *Briſtol*, his brother, Mr. *Charles*, in *London* and elſewhere, Mr. *Ingham* had been

(*c*) "Once upwards of twenty pounds were collected "in halfpence." *M. S.*

preaching

preaching in many churches of *Yorkſhire*, Mr. *Kinchin* in *Oxford*, and Mr. *Rogers* in *Bedfordſhire*. Thus the ſeed ſown was gradually increaſed, and the embargo which was now laid on the ſhipping, gave him leiſure for more journeys through various parts of *England*; and God was pleaſed to crown his labours with amazing ſucceſs.

Some demur happening in *Briſtol*, he went there a few days; put Mr. *John Weſley* (who had now made a progreſs in building the *Kingſwood* ſchool, and alſo had begun a room at *Briſtol)* in full power; and took him along with him, and introduced him as a field preacher, at *Glouceſter* and other places. Every where the word ſeemed to ſink deeper and deeper into the hearts of the hearers. Singing and praying were heard in *Kingſwood*, inſtead of curſing and ſwearing; and in many other places the fruits of righteouſneſs evidently appeared.

Many falſe reports were now ſpread abroad concerning him. Not a journey he could make, but he was either killed or wounded, or died ſuddenly. One groundleſs fiction was continually invented after another. And the Biſhop of *London* laid hold of this occaſion for publiſhing a charge to his clergy to avoid the extremes of enthuſiaſm and lukewarmneſs. But amidſt theſe diſcouragements, he was not left without the countenance and friendſhip of ſeveral perſons of influence.

The embargo being taken off, and upwards of a thouſand pounds collected for the Orphan-houſe,

he

he failed the second time for *America*, *August* 14, 1739, with a family consisting of eight men, one boy, and two children, besides his friend Mr. *Seward*.

After a passage of nine weeks (*d*), he arrived at *Philadelphia* in the beginning of *November*, and was immediately invited to preach in the churches, to which people of all denominations thronged, as in *England*. From thence, he was invited to *New-York*, by Mr. *Noble*, the only person with whom he had any acquaintance in that part of *America*. Upon his arrival, they waited on the Commissary; but he refused him the use of his church. Mr. *Whitefield*, therefore, preached in the fields, and on the evening of the same day, to a very thronged and attentive audience in the Rev. Mr. *Pemberton*'s meeting-house: and continued to do so twice or thrice a day for above a week; and by all that could be judged, with very great success.

On his way to and from *Philadelphia*, he also preached at *Elizabeth-Town*, *Maidenhead*, *Abingdon*, *Neshamini*, *Burlington*, and *New-Brunswick*, in the *New-Jerseys*, to some thousands gathered from various parts, among whom there had been a considerable awakening, by the instrumentality of one

(*d*) For the manner in which he employed his time on board, see his Journals and Letters of this period.—A little before he sailed, he finished his Answer to the Bishop of *London*'s Pastoral Letter. And during the voyage, he wrote his Letter to the Religious Societies of *England*. See Vol. IV. of his Works.

Mr. *Freelinghauſen*, a *Dutch* miniſter, and the Meſſrs. *Tennents*, *Blair*, and *Rowland*. He had alſo the pleaſure of meeting with old Mr. *Tennent*, as well as his ſons, and with Mr. *Dickinſon* (*e*). It was no leſs pleaſing than ſtrange to him, to ſee ſuch gatherings in a foreign land; miniſters and people ſhedding tears; ſinners ſtruck with awe; and ſerious perſons, who had been much run down and deſpiſed, filled with joy. Mean time, the Orphan-houſe affairs went on well. The things brought from *England*, were ſold for their benefit. A ſloop was purchaſed, of which Captain *Gladman* was maſter; and a young man, who had lately received ſerious impreſſions under Mr. *Whitefield*'s preaching, willingly offered himſelf as mate.

(*e*) " Mr. *Tennent*, and his brethren in preſbytery, " intend breeding up gracious youths for our Lord's " vineyard. The place wherein the young men ſtudy " now, is a log-houſe, about twenty-feet long, and near " as many broad. From this deſpiſed place, ſeven or " eight worthy miniſters of *Jeſus* have lately been ſent " forth, and a foundation is now laying for the inſtruction " of many others. The work, I am perſuaded, is of " God, and therefore will not come to nought." Journals, *November* 22, 1739.

The event has verified his judgment about this inſtitution. It is now a large college at *Princetown* in *New-Jerſeys:* and has already had many worthy preſidents (ſome of whoſe names are well known in the learned world) ſuch as Mr. *Dickinſon*, Mr. *Burr*, Mr. *Jonathan Edwards*, Mr. *Samuel Davies*, Dr. *Finley*, and at preſent Dr. *Witherſpoon*, by whoſe abilities, care, and activity it is, under Providence, in a very flouriſhing condition.

And there has been lately, (ſummer 1770) a remarkable revival of religion among the ſtudents, both in the college and grammar-ſchool.

Many

Many little preſents were made to his family for ſea ſtores, and the intended houſe. And about the end of *November*, he took his leave of his family, and ordered them to proceed in their voyage to *Savannah*, while himſelf, with Mr. *Seward* and two more determined to go thither by land.

Numbers followed, ſome twenty, ſome ſixty miles out from *Philadelphia*. He preached at *Cheſter*, *Wilmington*, *Newcaſtle*, (where he was met on the way by Mr. *Roſs*, miniſter of the place) *Chriſtianbridge*, and *Whitely Creek*, where Mr. *William Tennent* (whoſe meeting-houſe is in the neighbourhood) had erected a tent for him. Here he obſerved new ſcenes of field-preaching, or rather preaching in the woods, opened to him. At *Whitely-Creek*, perhaps the congregation did not conſiſt of leſs than ten thouſand. Earneſt invitations were given him to come and preach elſewhere; which he had great encouragement to do, from the viſible ſucceſs of his labours; but he haſted to be with his family at *Savannah*.

In his way thither, he alſo preached in *Maryland*, at *North-Eaſt* and *Joppa*, and at *Annapolis*, the capital, where he was received with much civility by the Governor; and at *Upper-Marlborough*.

In *Virginia* alſo, he preached at *Williamſburgh*, where he was courteouſly received by the Governor, and by Mr. *Blair* the Commiſſary, whom he ſpeaks of with great regard.

When he came to *North-Carolina*, he thought it ſeemed to be the greateſt waſte, and the moſt uncultivated

cultivated of ſpots, both in a temporal and ſpiritual ſenſe. Yet here, in a place called *Newburn-Town*, his preaching was attended with an uncommon influence. And it was not without effect at *Newton* on *Cape Fear* river, where were many from *Scotland* amongſt the congregation, who had lately come over to ſettle in *North-Carolina*.

Immediately on coming into *South-Carolina* province, (he ſays) a viſible change was obſervable in the manners of the people. And when he came to *Charleſtown*, (which was on *Saturday*, *January* 3, 1740) he could ſcarce believe but he was amongſt *Londoners*, both in reſpect of gaiety of dreſs, and politeneſs of manners.

Here he ſoon perceived, that by field-preaching he had loſt his old friend the Commiſſary, who once promiſed to defend him with life and fortune. However, at the requeſt of the Independent miniſter, (who continued his friend to his dying day) he preached in his meeting-houſe. At the firſt ſermon, all was gay and trifling, no impreſſion ſeemingly made at all. But next morning in the *French* church, the ſcene was quite altered. A viſible, and almoſt univerſal concern appeared. Many of the inhabitants earneſtly deſired him to give them one ſermon more; for which purpoſe he was prevailed upon to put off his journey till the next day; and there was reaſon to think his ſtay was not in vain.

Next morning, he and his companions ſet out in an open canoe for *Savannah*; and in their way,

for the firſt time, lay in the woods, upon the ground near a large fire, which keeps off the wild beaſts; upon which he makes this reflection (*f*), "An "emblem, I thought, of the divine love and pre- "ſence keeping off evils and corruptions from "the ſoul."

On his arrival at *Savannah*, *January* 11, he was very happy to meet his family, who had got there three weeks before him; and to find by letters from *England*, *New-York*, &c. that the work of God proſpered. But it was a melancholy thing to ſee the colony of *Georgia* reduced even to a much lower ebb than when he left it, and almoſt deſerted by all but ſuch as could not well go away. Employing theſe, therefore, he thought would be of ſingular ſervice, and the money expended, might be alſo a means of keeping them in the colony.

Before his arrival, Mr. *Haberſham* had pitched upon a plot of ground for the Orphan-houſe, of 500 acres, about ten miles from *Savannah*, and had already begun to clear and ſtock it. The orphans, in the mean time, were accommodated in a hired houſe. On this, many years after, he makes the following reflections: "Had I pro- "ceeded according to the rules of prudence, I "ſhould have firſt cleared the land, built the "houſe, and then taken in the orphans; but I "found their condition ſo pitiable, and the inha- "bitants ſo poor, that I immediately opened an

(*f*) *M. S.*

"in-

" infirmary, hired a large houſe at a great rent,
" and took in, at different times, twenty-four or-
" phans. To all this I was encouraged, by the
" example of Profeſſor *Franck*. But I forgot to
" recollect, that Profeſſor *Franck* built in *Glaucha*,
" in a populous country, and that I was building
" in the very tail of the world, where I could not
" expect the leaſt ſupply, and which the badneſs
" of its conſtitution, which every day I expected
" would be altered, rendered by far the moſt ex-
" penſive part of all his Majeſty's dominions. But
" had I received more and ventured leſs, I ſhould
" have ſuffered leſs, and others more (*g*)."

The firſt collection he made in *America*, was at the Rev. Mr. *Smith*'s meeting-houſe in *Charleſtown*, whither he went about the middle of *March*, to ſee his brother, the Captain of a ſhip from *England*. He was deſired by ſome of the inhabitants, to ſpeak in behalf of the poor orphans; and the collection amounted to ſeventy pounds *ſterling*. This was no ſmall encouragement to him at that time, eſpecially as he had reaſon to think it came from thoſe who had received ſpiritual benefit by his miniſtrations.

Having returned to *Savannah*, he went to the ſpot of ground, where he intended the Orphan-houſe ſhould be built, and upon the 25th day of *March*, 1740, laid the firſt brick of the great houſe, which he called *Bethesda*, i. e. *a houſe of*

(*g*) *M. S.*

mercy (*b*). By this time, near forty children were taken in, to be provided with food and raiment; and counting the workmen and all, he had near a hundred to be daily fed. He had very little money in bank; and yet he was not diſcouraged, being perſuaded that the beſt thing he could do at preſent for the infant colony was, to carry on the work.

(*b*) Long after this he writes, "Bleſſed be God, I "have not been diſappointed in the hope, that it would "be a houſe and place of mercy to many, both in re-"ſpect to body and ſoul." *M. S.*

CHAP.

CHAP. VI.

From his laying the Foundation of his Orphan-houſe in Georgia, *to his Arrival in* England, 1741.

MR. *Whitefield* again, therefore, ſet off in a ſloop for *Newcaſtle* in *Penſylvania*, where he arrived about the middle of *April*. In this ſhort paſſage of ten days, he was much diſcouraged both by weakneſs of body, and low ſpirits. But, as he obſerved afterwards, Providence was infinitely better to him than his fears, and exceeded his moſt ſanguine expectations. For during the ſpace of two months, he was ſtrengthened to preach, generally twice, and frequently, beſides travelling, thrice a day. At *Philadelphia*, the churches were no longer allowed him; but he preached in the fields to congregations that conſiſted ſometimes of near ten thouſand, and with great apparent ſucceſs. Large collections were made for the Orphan-houſe; once, not leſs than an hundred and ten pounds *ſterling*. Societies for praying and ſinging were ſet on foot; and in every part of the town, many were concerned about their ſalvation. Some were wrought upon in a more inſtantaneous, others in a more progreſſive, ſome in a more ſilent, others in a more violent manner (*i*).

(*i*) "Many negroes came; ſome of them inquiring, "Have I a ſoul?" *M. S.*

At *New-York*, *New-Brunſwick*, *Stratton-Iſland*, *Baſkenridge*, *Whitely-Creek*, *Frogs-Manor*, *Reedy-Iſland*, there was great concern upon the mind both of the preacher and hearers.

Sometimes he was almoſt dead with heat and fatigue. Thrice a day he was lifted up upon his horſe, unable to mount otherwiſe; then rode and preached, and came in and laid himſelf along upon two or three chairs. He did not doubt but ſuch a courſe would ſoon take him to his deſired reſt. Yet he had many delightful hours with Meſſrs. *Tennents*, *Blair*, &c. "Night, ſays he, was as it "were turned into day, when we rode ſinging "through the woods. I could not help recom- "mending theſe men, wherever I went, in the "ſtrongeſt manner, becauſe I ſaw they gloried in "the croſs of Chriſt (*k*)."

With

(*k*) *M. S.*

In a Journal written by Mr. *William Seward*, (Mr. *Whitefield*'s companion in travel) we have the following particulars belonging to this period.

"*April* 9, 1740. Mr. *Whitefield* propoſed my going "to *England* upon ſeveral important affairs, particularly "to bring over Mr. *Hutchins* to take care of the Orphan- "houſe in his abſence—To acquaint the Truſtees of "*Georgia* with the ſtate of the colony, and the means, "under God, for the better eſtabliſhment thereof, it "being now upheld almoſt wholly by the ſoldiery and "Orphan-houſe, moſt of the people who are uncon- "cerned in either, being gone or going—The proper "means are principally three, 1. An allowance of ne- "groes. 2. A free title to the lands. 3. An indepen- "dent magiſtracy, viz. ſuch as are able and willing to "ſerve without fee or reward. My buſineſs with the "Truſtees will be farther, to bring over the money "lodged

With great joy he reached *Savannah* on the 5th of *June*, bringing his orphans, in money and provisions,

" lodged in their hands for building the church at *Sa-*
" *vannah*. I am, moreover, to collect subscriptions for
" a negroe school in *Pensylvania*, where our brother
" *Whitefield* proposes to take up land, in order to settle
" a town for the reception of such *English* friends, whose
" hearts God shall incline to come and settle there.

" *April* 13. Mr. *Tennent* informed us of the great
" success which had attended our brother *Whitefield*'s
" preaching, when here last. For some time, a general
" silence was fixed by the Lord on people's minds, and
" many began seriously to think on what foundation they
" stood—A general outward reformation has been visi-
" ble. Many ministers have been quickened in their
" zeal to preach the word in season and out of season.
" Congregations are increased, and some few, it is hoped,
" will be brought, through their convictions, into a
" sound and saving conversion."

" *April* 14. Mr. *Jones*, the Baptist minister, told us
" of two other ministers, Mr. *Treat* and Mr. *Morgan*,
" who were so affected with our brother *Whitefield*'s spi-
" rit, that the latter had gone forth, preaching the glad
" tidings of salvation, towards the sea-coast in the *Jer-*
" *seys*, and many other places which lay in darkness and
" the shadow of death. The former told his congrega-
" tion, that he had been hitherto deceiving himself and
" them; and that he could not preach to them at present,
" but desired they would join in prayer with him.

" *April* 15. We were informed, that an *Indian* trader
" was so affected with brother *Whitefield*'s doctrine, that
" he is gone to teach the *Indians*, with whom he used to
" trade.

" *April* 18. This day was published our brother
" *Whitefield*'s Letter to the Inhabitants of *Maryland*, *Vir-*
" *ginia*, *North* and *South-Carolina*, about their abuse of
" the poor negroes. (See his Works, Vol. IV.)

" Heard of a drinking club that had a negroe boy at-
" tending them, who used to mimic people for their di-
" version. The gentlemen bid him mimic our brother

visions, upwards of five hundred pounds *sterling*. Next day, when they came to public worship, young

" *Whitefield*, which he was very unwilling to do; but " they insisting upon it, he stood up and said, 'I speak " the truth in *Christ*, I lie not; unless you repent you " will all be damned.'—This unexpected speech broke " up the club, which has not met since.

" —— Notice was given of a new lecture at *German-* " *Town* every *Thursday*, by four ministers.

" *April* 22. Agreed with Mr. *Allen* for five thousand " acres of land on the forks of *Delaware*, at 2200*l. sterl.* " the conveyance to be made to Mr. *Whitefield*, and after " that assigned to me, as security for my advancing the " money.—Mr. *Whitefield* proposes to give orders for " building the negroe school on the purchased land, be- " fore he leaves the province.

" *April* 24. Came to *Christopher Wigner*'s plantation " in *Skippack*, where many *Dutch* people are settled, and " where the famous Mr. *Spalemburg* resided lately. It " was surprizing to see such a multitude of people ga- " thered together in such a wilderness country, thirty " miles distant from *Philadelphia*.——Our brother was " exceedingly carried out in his sermon, to press poor " sinners to come to *Christ* by faith, and claim all their " privileges; viz. Not only righteousness and peace, " but joy in the Holy Ghost: and after he had done, " our dear friend *Peter Boehler* preached in *Dutch*, to " those who could not understand our brother in *Eng-* " *lish*.

" Before our brother left *Philadelphia*, he was desired " to visit one who was under a deep sense of sin from " hearing him preach. And in praying with this per- " son, he was so carried beyond himself, that the whole " company (which were about twenty) seemed to be " filled with the Holy Ghost, and magnified the God of " heaven.

" *April* 25. Rose at three o'clock: and though our " brother *Whitefield* was very weak in body, yet the " Lord enabled him to ride near fifty miles, and to " preach to about five thousand people at *Amwell*, with-

" the

young and old were all diſſolved in tears. Some, who came to viſit them, were alſo deeply impreſſed; particularly Mr. *Hugh Bryan* and his family, and ſome (*kk*) of his relations. Several from *Beauford* in *South-Carolina*, then received their firſt impreſſions. All theſe things gave him great encouragement. And though his family was now great, (near a hundred and fifty, including workmen) and the plan laid down would have required ſome

" the ſame power as uſual.——Mr. *Gilbert Tennent*, " Mr. *Rowland*, Mr. *Wales*, and Mr. *Campbel*, four " godly miniſters, met us here.

" *April* 26. Came to *New-Brunſwick*.—Met Mr. *No-* " *ble* from *New-York*, a zealous promoter of our Lord's " kingdom. He ſaid their ſociety at *New-York* was in- " creaſed from ſeventy, to one hundred and ſeventy, " and was daily increaſing; and that Meſſrs. *Gilbert* and " *William Tennents*, Mr. *Rowland*, and ſeveral others, " were hard labourers in our Lord's vineyard.

" *April* 28. Had a moſt affectionate parting with our " dear brother *Whitefield*, and our other brethren."

The reſt of Mr. *Seward*'s Journal was written moſtly during his paſſage to *England*, where he arrived *June* 19, and with which it concludes. Mr. *Whitefield*, in the new edition of his Jouruals, 1756, obſerves, " *April* " 28, 1740. This was the laſt time I ſaw my worthy " friend; for, before my return to *England*, he was en- " tered into his reſt, having left behind, a glorious teſti- " mony of the transforming efficacy of converting grace. " This hath alſo been the happy caſe of his brother " *Benjamin*, who lately finiſhed his courſe with joy."

(*kk*) For a more particular account of Mr. *Bryan*'s family, and of his viſit to Mr. *Whitefield*, and what followed upon it, See No. I. of *Living Chriſtianity delineated in the Diaries and Letters of Mr.* Hugh Bryan *and Mrs.* Mary Hutſon. Recommended by the Rev. Dr. *Conder* and Dr. *Gibbons*.

thou-

thouſands to ſupport it; and although very often he had not twenty pounds in caſh, he was ſtill kept from being diſheartened; and his friends, believing the work to be of God, continued cheerfully to aſſiſt him.

Though he was very weak in body, yet the cry from various quarters for more preaching, and the neceſſity of ſupplying ſo large a family, made him go again to *Charles-Town*, where, as well as at *Dorcheſter*, *Aſhley-Ferry*, *Ponpon*, and *John's-Iſland*, he preached to very attentive and affected auditories. *Charles-Town* was the place of the greateſt ſucceſs, and of the greateſt oppoſition. The Commiſſary poured out his anathemas, refuſed to give him the ſacrament, and publiſhed ſome letters againſt him. But all in vain. He preached twice almoſt every day, to great crowds, in the Independent and Baptiſt meeting-houſes; beſides expounding in the evening in merchants houſes. Thus he went on ſucceſsfully (though often ready to die with the exceſſive heat) till the end of *Auguſt*: when having received moſt preſſing invitations from the Rev. Dr. *Colman*, and Mr. *Cooper*, miniſters in *Boſton*; and being deſirous of ſeeing the deſcendants of the good old Puritans, and their ſeats of learning; and having encouragement that ſomething might be done for the Orphan-houſe, he embarked in the Orphan-houſe ſloop for *New-England*, in company with ſeveral *Charles-Town* friends; and arrived at *Rhode-Iſland*, *September* 14.

Here

Here ſeveral gentlemen ſoon came to viſit him, among whom was the Rev. Mr. *Clap*, an aged diſſenting miniſter, in whom he thought he ſaw what manner of men the old Puritans were, who firſt ſettled *New-England*, and was much delighted with his converſation. They went together to the incumbent's houſe, to aſk the uſe of the church, which was granted: and in it he preached three days, twice a day, to deeply affected auditories.

This he thought was a happy entrance into *New-England*. But he was ſtill more agreeably ſurpriſed, when, before he got to *Boſton*, he was met ſeveral miles from the city, by the Governor's ſon, and ſome of the miniſters, and principal inhabitants, who conducted him to Mr. *St—nf—rd*'s (brother-in-law to Dr. *Colman*) who, with his collegue Mr. *Cooper*, and many others, came and joined in prayer.

Jonathan Belcher, Eſq; was then Governor of the *Maſſachuſet*'s colony, and *Joſiah Willard*, Secretary. Both theſe gentlemen were his ſincere friends; ſo were the miniſters, Meſſrs. *Web*, *Foxcraft*, *Prince*, Dr. *Sewall*, *Gee*, &c. To avoid, however, giving any juſt offence, he went to the *Engliſh* church to morning prayers; but finding, by converſation with the Commiſſary, and ſome other clergy, that there was no acceſs there, he began preaching in the afternoon, at Dr. *Colman*'s meet-houſe, and ſo went round (except when he preached on the common) to the other meeting-houſes,

eſpecially the largeſt of them, for ſome time together.

Governor *Belcher* generally attended; Secretary *Willard*, and ſeveral of the Council, ſet the ſame example; and all ſeemed to vie who ſhould ſhow the greateſt reſpect. Congregations were exceeding large, both within and without; and were much affected. Old Mr. *Walter*, who ſucceeded Mr. *Elliot*, commonly called the apoſtle of the *Indians*, at *Roxbury*, ſaid it was Puritaniſm revived: and Dr. *Colman* ſaid, when preaching at his meeting-houſe the *Sunday* following, that "it was the "happieſt day he ever ſaw in his life."

He preached alſo at *Cambridge*, *Marblehead*, *Ipſwich*, *Newbury*, *Hampton*, *York*, *Portſmouth*, *Salem*, and *Maulden*, to large congregations. The gentlemen of the greateſt repute had their houſes open, in every place; collections were readily made for the orphans: and, in about a week, having preached ſixteen times, and rode a hundred and ſeventy miles, he returned to *Boſton*, *October* 6.

Here the congregations were ſtill increaſed. At his farewell ſermon, it was ſuppoſed there were near twenty thouſand people. He received a great number of letters, and could have ſpent whole days in converſing with thoſe that came to him under ſoul concern. Miniſters and ſtudents attended. Little children were impreſſed. The contributions for the orphans were very conſiderable, amounting, in town and country, to near five hundred pounds *ſterling*.

He set out next for *Northampton:* having read in *England* an account of a remarkable work of conversion there, published by their pastor the Rev. Mr. *Jonathan Edwards*; and having a great desire to see him, and to hear the account from his own mouth.

At *Concord*, *Sudbury*, *Marlborough*, *Worcester*, *Leicester*, *Hadley*, places all lying in the way, pulpits and houses were every where opened, and a continued influence attended his preaching. At *Northampton*, when he came to remind them of what God had formerly done for them, it was like putting fire to tinder. Both minister and people were much moved; as were the children of the family, at an exhortation which their father desired Mr. *Whitefield* to give them.

After leaving *Northampton*, he preached in *Westfield*, *Springfield*, *Suffield*, *Windsor*, *Hertford*, *Weathersfield*, *Middleton*, and *Wallingford*, to large and affected congregations. And *October* 23, reached *Newhaven*, where he was affectionately received by Mr. *Pierpont*, brother-in-law to Mr. *Edwards*, and had the pleasure of seeing his friend Mr. *Noble* of *New-York*, who brought him letters from *Georgia*. Here also he was much refreshed with the conversation of several gospel ministers. It being assembly time, and the Governor and Burgesses then sitting, he stayed till Lord's-day, and had the pleasure to see numbers daily impressed. The good old Governor was particularly much affected; and at a private visit which Mr. *Whitefield* paid him, said,

ſaid, " Thanks be to God, for ſuch refreſhings in " our way to heaven."

On *Monday* morning he ſet forward, and preached with uſual ſucceſs at *Milford*, *Stratford*, *Fairfield*, *Newark*, and *Stanford*, where he was viſited by ſome miniſters under deep concern.

This was on the borders of *New-York* province, into which he now again entered, and preached at *Rye* and *Kingſbridge*, on his way to the city of *New York*, where he arrived *October* 30. Here for three days ſucceſſively, and afterwards at *Staten-Iſland*, *Newark*, *Baſkenridge*, his preaching appeared to be attended with more ſucceſs than ever. At *Trenton* he had a long conference with ſome miniſters about Mr. *Gilbert Tenent*'s complying with an invitation to go and preach in *New-England*. After prayer, and conſidering the arguments both for and againſt this propoſal, they thought it beſt he ſhould go; which, however diffident of himſelf, he was perſuaded to do. And his miniſtrations were attended with an extraordinary bleſſing to multitudes, as is particularly narrated elſewhere (*l*).

Saturday

(*l*) See Prince's *Chriſtian Hiſtory*, or, *Hiſtorical Collections of the Succeſs of the Goſpel*, Vol. II. where the facts are ſet down in the order of time.

About this time Mr. *Whitefield* wrote his *Letter to ſome Church-Members of the Preſbyterian Perſuaſion, in Anſwer to certain Scruples and Queries which they had propoſed.* See Works, Vol. IV.

What

Saturday November 8, Mr. *Whitefield* came back to *Philadelphia*, and next day preached to ſeveral thou-

What ſort of reception he had in *New-England*, will farther appear from the following letters of ſome eminent miniſters of *Boſton*, and adjacent towns, publiſhed by the Rev. Mr. *Joſiah Smith*, of *Charles-Town*, in the *South-Carolina* Gazette.

" *Rev. and dear Sir*, *October* 1, 1740.

" Your kind letter by Mr. *Whitefield*, and your other, " are both now before me. You raiſed our expectations " of him very much, as did his Journals more, and " Mr. *P.* of *New-York*, concurred with them; but we " own, now that we have ſeen and heard him, that our " expectations are all anſwered and exceeded, not only " in his zealous, and fervent, abounding labours, but in " the command of the hearts and affections of his " hearers.—He has been received here as an angel of " God, and ſervant of *Jeſus Chriſt*.—I hope this viſit to " us, will be of very great uſe and benefit to miniſters " and people. He has found his heart and mouth much " opened to ſpeak freely and boldly to us, and he finds " it received with joy." The ſame Gentleman, *November* 29, 1740, writes thus:—" Mr. *Whitefield* left us " ſeven weeks ago; the laſt week we heard of him at " *Philadelphia*. I hear that much of the preſence of God " is with him. He has left a bleſſing behind him, we " hope, with us. Our people, high and low, old and " young, are very ſwift to hear. The excellent meek- " neſs of Mr. *Whitefield*'s Anſwer to the Queriſts, will " honour him to you."

Another, in a Letter, *October* 22, 1740, expreſſes himſelf thus: " Though it is always a ſingular pleaſure to " me to hear from you, yet your two letters by " Mr. *Whitefield*, had a new circumſtance of pleaſure " from the dear hand that preſented them. I perceive " you was impatient to know what ſort of entering in " he had among us. We (miniſters, rulers, and peo- " ple) generally received him as an angel of God. When " he preached his farewell ſermon in our common, there

" were

thouſands in a houſe built for that purpoſe, ſince his laſt departure. Here he both heard of, and

ſaw

" were twenty-three thouſand, at a moderate computa-
" tion. We are abundantly convinced, that you ſpoke
" the words of truth and ſoberneſs in your ſermon relat-
" ing to him. Such a power and preſence of God with
" a preacher, and in religious aſſemblies, I never ſaw
" before; but I would not limit the Holy One of *Iſrael.*
" The prejudices of many are quite conquered, and ex-
" pectations of others vaſtly outdone, as they freely own.
" A conſiderable number are awakened, and many
" chriſtians ſeem to be greatly quickened. He has
" preached twice at *Cambridge*; he has one warm friend
" there, Mr. ——, the tutor, who has followed him to
" *Northampton*, and will, for ought I know, to *Georgia.*
" But Mr. *Whitefield* has not a warmer friend any where,
" than the firſt man among us. Our Governor has
" ſhewed him the higheſt reſpect, carried him in his
" coach from place to place, and could not help follow-
" ing him fifty miles out of town. I hope the religion
" of the country will fare the better for the impreſſions
" left on him."——The ſame Gentleman writes, *De-*
cember 2, 1740. " The man greatly beloved, I ſuppoſe,
" may be with you before now. That his viſit here
" will be eſteemed a diſtinguiſhing mercy of heaven by
" many, I am well ſatisfied. Every day gives me freſh
" proofs of *Chriſt*'s ſpeaking in him. A ſmall ſet of
" gentlemen amongſt us, when they ſaw the affections
" of the people ſo moved under his preaching, would
" attribute it only to the force of ſound and geſtures.
" But the impreſſions on many are ſo laſting, and have
" been ſo transforming, as to carry plain ſignatures of a
" divine hand going along with him.——Another Gen-
" tleman writes, *October* 21, 1740. and thanks me for
" recommending to him, ſo worthy a perſon as the
" Rev. Mr. *Whitefield*, who has preached *Chriſt*, and the
" great truths of the goſpel among them, with remark-
" able fervour of ſpirit, and to a general acceptance;
" and hopes that there are many awakened by his mi-
" niſtry.——Another of the ſame date writes, That

" he

saw many, who were the fruits of his former ministrations; and continued among them till *November*

" he had conceived very highly of him by some clauses " in my private letters, and the sermon I preached by " way of apology, &c. But confesses he had not gone " high enough in his opinion of him, and that his ex- " pectations are more than answered in him.——Ano- " ther, *November* 21, 1740. blesses God that he was sent " thither; that he had so many opportunities of seeing " him, and sitting under his ministry. That he ap- " peared to him a wonderful man indeed; that his " preaching was accompanied with a divine power and " energy, beyond any man's he had ever heard before: " and the effects of his ministry were very marvellous " among them.——I shall conclude with the following " passage of another Gentleman, in a letter of *Novem-* " *ber* 1, 1740. I received yours by the Rev. Mr. *White-* " *field*, with whom I coveted a great deal more private " conversation than I had opportunity for, by reason of " the throngs of people almost perpetually with him. " But he appears to be full of the love of God, and fired " with an extraordinary zeal for the cause of *Christ*, and " applies himself with the most indefatigable diligence, " that ever was seen among us, for the promoting the " good of souls. His head, his heart, his hands seem " to be full of his Master's business. His discourses, " especially when he goes into the expository way, are " very entertaining. Every eye is fixed upon him, and " every ear chained to his lips. Most are very much " affected; many awakened and convinced; and a ge- " neral seriousness excited. His address more especially " to the passions, is wonderful, and beyond what I have " ever seen. I think I can truly say, that his preaching " has quickened me, and I believe it has many others " besides, as well as the people. Several of my flock, " especially the younger sort, have been brought under " convictions by his preaching; and there is this re- " markable amongst them of the good effect of his preach- " ing, that the word preached now by us, seems more " precious to them, and comes with more power upon

vember 17, preaching twice a day. Afterwards he preached in *Glouceſter*, *Greenwich*, *Piles-Grove*, *Cohanſie*, *Salem*, *Newcaſtle*, *Whiteley-Creek*, *Fog's-Manor*, *Nottingham*; in many or moſt of which places, the congregations were numerous, and deeply affected.

November 22, he got to *Bohemia* in *Maryland*, and from thence he went to *Reedy-Iſland*. At both places his preaching was attended with great influence. And at the laſt (their ſloop being detained by contrary winds near a week) he preached frequently. All the Captains and crews of the ſhips that were wind-bound conſtantly attended, and great numbers crowded out of the country, ſome as far as from *Philadelphia:* and as great concern as ever came upon their minds.

December 1, he ſet ſail from *Reedy-Iſland* for *Charles-Town* in *South-Carolina*, and here he makes the following remark: "It is now the ſeventy-"fifth day, ſince I arrived at *Rhode-Iſland*. My "body was then weak, but the Lord has much re-"newed its ſtrength. I have been enabled to preach, "I think, an hundred and ſeventy-five times in "public, beſides exhorting frequently in private. "I have travelled upwards of eight hundred miles, "and gotten upwards of ſeven hundred pounds *ſterl.* "in goods, proviſions, and money, for the *Geor-*"*gia* orphans. Never did I perform my journeys

"them. My prayer for him is, that his precious life "may be lengthened out, and that he may be an inſtru-"ment of reviving dying religion in all places whither-"ſoever he comes, who ſeems to be wonderfully fitted "for, as well as ſpirited to it."

"with

" with ſo little fatigue, or ſee ſuch a continuance " of the divine preſence in the congregations to " whom I have preached. Praiſe the Lord, O my " ſoul (*m*)."

After a pleaſant paſſage of eight or nine days, and preaching again at *Charles-Town* and *Savannah*, he arrived on the 14th of *December* at the Orphan-houſe, where he found his family comfortably ſettled. At *Rhode-Iſland* he had providentially met with one Mr. *Jonathan Barber*, whoſe heart was very much knit to him, and who was willing to help him at the Orphan-houſe. Him, therefore, he left ſuperintendent for the ſpiritual, and Mr. *Haberſham* for the temporal affairs; and having ſpent a very comfortable *Chriſtmas* with his orphan family, he ſet off again for (*n*) *Charles-Town*, where he arrived *January* 3, 1741, and preached twice every day as uſual, to moſt affectionate auditories, till the 16th of *January*, when he went on board for *England*. He arrived the 11th of *March* at *Falmouth*, rode poſt to *London*, and preached at *Kennington Common* the *Sunday* following.

(*m*) Journals, *December* 1, 1740.

(*n*) At *Charles-town*, the Commiſſary was going to proceed againſt him for correcting and preparing for the preſs, a letter written by Mr. *Hugh B——n*, in which it was hinted, that the clergy break their canons. He alſo laid him under ſuſpenſion for omitting to uſe the form of prayer, preſcribed in the communion book, when officiating in a diſſenting congregation.——But Mr. *Whitefield* gave ſecurity for his appearance, and appealed home.

CHAP. VII.

From his Arrival in England, *in the Year* 1741, *to his leaving* Scotland, *the ſame Year.*

THE new and unexpected ſituation in which he now found himſelf, will be beſt deſcribed in his own words: "But what a trying ſcene "appeared here! In my zeal, during my journey "through *America*, I had written two well-meant, "tho' injudicious letters, againſt *England*'s two "great favourites, *The Whole Duty of Man*, and "Archbiſhop *Tillotſon*, who, I ſaid, knew no "more of religion than *Mahomet*. The *Moravians* "had made inroads upon the ſocieties. Mr. *John* "*Weſley*, ſome way or other, had been prevailed "on to preach and print in favour of perfection, "and univerſal redemption; and very ſtrongly "againſt election, a doctrine, which I thought, "and do now believe was taught me of God, "therefore could not poſſibly recede from. "Thinking it my duty ſo to do, I had written "an anſwer at the Orphan-houſe, which tho' re-"viſed, and much approved of by ſome good and "judicious divines, I think had ſome too ſtrong "expreſſions about abſolute reprobation, which "the apoſtle leaves rather to be inferred, than expreſt.

" expreſt. The world was angry at me for the
" former, and numbers of my own ſpiritual chil-
" dren for the latter. One that got ſome hun-
" dreds of pounds by my Sermons, being led
" away by the *Moravians*, refuſed to print for
" me any more. And others wrote to me, that
" God would deſtroy me in a fortnight; and that
" my fall was as great as *Peter*'s. Inſtead of
" having thouſands to attend me, ſcarce one of
" my ſpiritual children came to ſee me from
" morning to night. Once at *Kennington-Common*,
" I had not above a hundred to hear me. At
" the ſame time, I was much embarraſſed in my
" outward circumſtances. A thouſand pounds I
" owed for the Orphan-houſe. Two hundred and
" fifty pounds bills, drawn upon Mr. *Seward*, now
" dead, were returned upon me. I was alſo
" threatened to be arreſted for two hundred
" pounds more. My travelling expences alſo to
" be defrayed. A family of a hundred to be
" daily maintained, four thouſand miles off, in
" the deareſt place of the King's dominions.
" Ten thouſand times would I rather have died,
" than part with my old friends. It would have
" melted any heart to have heard Mr. *Charles*
" *Weſley* and me weeping, after prayer, that, if
" poſſible, the breach might be prevented. Once
" I preached in the *Foundery*, (a place which Mr.
" *John Weſley* had procured in my abſence) on
" *Gal.* iii. but no more. All my work was to
" begin again. One day, I was exceedingly re-

" freſhed in reading *Beza*'s Life of *Calvin*, wherein " were theſe words, ' *Calvin* is turned out of " *Geneva*, but behold a new Church ariſes.' A " gentlewoman lent me three hundred pounds to " pay the preſent Orphan-houſe demand: and a " ſerious perſon (whom I never ſaw or heard of) " giving me one guinea; I had ſuch confidence, " that I ran down with it to a friend, and ex- " preſſed my hope, that God who ſent this per- " ſon with the guinea, would make it up fifteen " hundred: which was the ſum I thought would " be wanted.

" Never had I preached in *Moorfields* on a week " day. But in the ſtrength of God, I began on " *Good-Friday*, and continued twice a day, walk- " ing backward and forward from *Leadenhall*, for " ſome time preaching under one of the trees, " and had the mortification of ſeeing numbers of " my ſpiritual children, who but a twelvemonth " ago could have plucked out their eyes for me, " running by me whilſt preaching, diſdaining ſo " much as to look at me, and ſome of them " putting their fingers in their ears, that they " might not hear one word I ſaid.

" A like ſcene opened at *Briſtol*, where I was " denied preaching in the houſe I had founded: " Buſy bodies, on both ſides, blew up the coals. " A breach enſued. But as both ſides differed " in judgment, and not in affection, and aimed " at the glory of our common Lord; though we " hearkened too much to tale-bearers on both

" ſides, we were kept from anathematizing each " other, and went on in our uſual way; being " agreed in one point, endeavouring to convert " ſouls to the ever bleſſed Mediator *(o)*."

In conſequence of this, one Mr. *Cennick*, a preacher, who could not fall in with Mr. *Weſley*'s ſentiments, and one or two more in like circumſtances, having joined Mr. *Whitefield*, they began a new houſe in *Kingſwood*, and ſoon eſtabliſhed a ſchool among them, that favoured Calviniſtical Principles. And here, and in ſeveral other places, they preached to very large and ſerious congregations, in the ſame manner as he had done in *America*.

Thither he intended to return as ſoon as poſſible. Mean time, it being inconvenient, on account of the weather, to preach morning and evening in *Moorfields*; ſome Free-grace Diſſenters, (who ſtood by him cloſely in that time of trial) got the loan of a piece of ground, and engaged with a carpenter to build a large temporary ſhed,

(o) About this time he was ordered to attend in the Parliament Houſe, to give information concerning the ſtate of the Colony in *Georgia*. " *April* 10, 1741. I " have been at the Parliament Houſe. The *Georgia* " affair was adjourned. It was ſomewhat of a trial to " be in the houſe. I then remembered what the " Apoſtle ſaid, ' We are become a ſpectacle to men.' " My Appeal will come to nothing, I believe. I have " waited upon the Speaker. He received me very " kindly." Letter CCLXXIV.

Again, " He treated me kindly, and aſſured me, that " there would be no perſecution in this King's reign." Letter CCLXXXVI.

to ſcreen the auditory from cold and rain, which he called a *Tabernacle*, as it was only intended to be made uſe of for a few months, during his ſtay in his native country. The place fixed upon, was very near the Foundery, which he diſliked, becauſe he thought it looked like erecting altar againſt altar; but upon this occaſion he remarks, "All was wonderfully over-ruled for good, and "for the furtherance of the Goſpel. A freſh "awakening immediately began. Congregations "grew exceeding large, and at the people's de- "ſire, I ſent (neceſſity reconciling me more and "more to lay-preaching) for Meſſeurs *Cennick*, "*Harris*, *Seagrave*, *Humphries*, &c. &c. &c. to "aſſiſt *(p)*."

Freſh doors were now opened to him, and invitations ſent to him from many places, where he had never been. At a common, near *Braintree* in *Eſſex*, upwards of ten thouſand perſons attended. At *Halſtead*, *Dedham*, *Coſsleſhall*, *Wethersfield*, *Colcheſter*, *Bury*, *Ipſwich*, the congregations were very large and much affected *(q)*.

At this time alſo, he was ſtrongly ſolicited by religious perſons, of different perſuaſions, to viſit *Scotland*. Several letters had paſt between him

(p) M. S.

(q) "Sweet was the converſation I had with ſeveral "miniſters of *Chriſt*. But our own clergy grew more "and more ſhy, now they knew I was a *Calviniſt*; "tho' no doubt (as Mr. *Bedford* told me when going to "the Biſhop of *London)* our Articles are *Calviniſtical*." M. S.

and

and the Meſſieurs *Erſkines*, ſome time before *(r)*, and he had a great deſire to ſee them. He therefore took his paſſage from *London* to *Leith*, where (after five days, which he employed in writing many excellent letters to his Orphans, &c. ſee Letter CCCXI. to CCCXXXVII.) he arrived *July* 30, 1741. Several perſons of diſtinction moſt gladly received him, and would have had him preach at *Edinburgh* directly; but he was determined that the Rev. Meſſieurs *Erſkines* ſhould have the firſt offer; and therefore went immediately to *Dumfermlin*, and preached in Mr. *Erſkines*'s Meeting-houſe.

Great perſuaſions were uſed to detain him at *Dumfermlin*, and as great to keep him from preaching for, and viſiting the Rev. Mr. *Wardlaw*, who had been collegue to Mr. *Ralph Erſkine* above

(r) See his Journals, and his Letters to the Rev. Mr. *R. E.* and the Rev. Mr. *E. E.*

In his laſt to Mr. *E. E.* before coming to *Scotland* (Letter CCLXXX) he writes, "*May* 16, 1741. This "morning, I received a kind letter from your brother "*Ralph*, who thinks it beſt for me wholly to join the "Aſſociate Preſbytery, if it ſhould pleaſe GOD to ſend "me into *Scotland*. This I cannot altogether come in- "to. I come only as an occaſional preacher, to preach "the ſimple Goſpel to all that are willing to hear me, "of whatever denomination. I write this, that there "may not be the leaſt miſunderſtanding between us. "I love and honour the Aſſociate Preſbytery in the "bowels of *Jeſus Chriſt*: but, let them not be offend- "ed, if in all things, I cannot immediately fall in with "them."

To the ſame purpoſe he writes to Mr. *R. E. May* 23, 1741. Letter CCLXXXVIII.

twenty

twenty years, and who, as well as the Rev. Mr. *Davidſon*, a diſſenting miniſter in *England*, that went along with Mr. *Whitefield*, were looked upon as perjured, for not adhering to the Solemn League and Covenant. This was new language to him, and therefore unintelligible. But that he might be better informed, it was propoſed that the Rev. Mr. *Moncrief*, Mr. *Ebenezer Erſkine*, and others, members of the Aſſociate Preſbytery, ſhould convene in a few days, in order to give him farther light.

In the mean time, Mr. *Ralph Erſkine* accompanied him to *Edinburgh*, where he preached in the Orphan-houſe Park, (field-preaching being no novelty in *Scotland)* to a very large and affected auditory, upon theſe words, "The Kingdom "of God is not Meat and Drink, but Righteouſ-"neſs, and Peace, and Joy in the Holy Ghoſt." The next day he preached in the Weſt Kirk, and expreſſed great pleaſure in hearing two Goſpel Sermons from the Rev. Mr. *Guſthart*, and the Rev. Mr. *Mac Vicar*. And the following day, he preached in the *Cannongate* Church, where Mr. *Ralph Erſkine* went up with him into the pulpit.

According to promiſe, he returned with him to *Dumfermlin*, where Mr. *E. Erſkine*, and ſeveral of the Aſſociate Preſbytery were met together. When Mr. *Whitefield* came, they ſoon propoſed to proceed to buſineſs. He aſked them for what purpoſe? They anſwered, to diſcourſe, and ſet him right about Church Government, and the Solemn League and Covenant. He replied, they might

ſave

ſave themſelves that trouble, for he had no ſcruple about it, and that ſettling Church Government, and preaching about the Solemn League and Covenant, was not his plan. He then told them ſomething of his experience, and how he was led into his preſent way of acting. One of them, in particular, ſaid he was deeply affected. And Mr. *E. Erſkine* deſired they would have patience with him, for that having been born and bred in *England*, and never ſtudied the point, he could not be ſuppoſed to be perfectly acquainted with it. But Mr. *M.* inſiſted, that he was therefore more inexcuſeable, for *England* had revolted moſt with reſpect to Church Government; and that he being born and educated there, could not but be acquainted with the matter in debate. Mr. *Whitefield* told him, he had never yet made the Solemn League and Covenant the ſubject of his ſtudy, being too buſy about matters which he judged of greater importance. Several replied, that every pin of the Tabernacle was precious. He anſwered, that in every building, there were outſide and inſide workmen; that the latter, at preſent, was his province; that if they thought themſelves called to the former, they might proceed in their own way, and he would proceed in his. He then aſked them ſeriouſly, what they would have him to do? The anſwer was, that he was not deſired to ſubſcribe immediately to the Solemn League and Covenant, but to preach only for them, till he had further light. He aſked, Why only for them?

Mr.

Mr. *R. E.* ſaid, " They were the Lord's People." He then aſked, Were no other the Lord's People but themſelves? If not, and if others were the Devil's people, they had more need to be preached to; that for his part, all places were alike to him; and that if the Pope himſelf would lend him his pulpit, he would gladly proclaim in it the righteouſneſs of the Lord *Jeſus Chriſt*. Something paſſed about taking two of their brethren with him to *England*, to ſettle Preſbytery there; and then with two more, to go and ſettle Preſbytery in *America*. But he aſked, Suppoſe a number of Independents ſhould come, and declare, that after the greateſt ſearch, they were convinced that Independency was the right Church Government, and would diſturb no body, if tolerated; ſhould they be tolerated? They anſwered, No.— Soon after this the company broke up. And Mr. *M.* preached upon *If.* xxi. 11, 12. " Watchman, " what of the night? &c." And took occaſion to declaim ſtrongly againſt the Ceremonies of the Church of *England*, and to argue (*s*), " That one " who held Communion with that Church, or " with the backſlidden Church of *Scotland*, could " not be an Inſtrument of Reformation." The

(*s*) " I attended; but the good man ſo ſpent himſelf " in the former part of his ſermon, in talking againſt " prelacy, the Common Prayer-Book, the ſurplice, the " roſe in the hat, and ſuch like externals; that when " he came to the latter part of his text, to invite poor " ſinners to *Jeſus Chriſt*, his breath was ſo gone, that he " could ſcarce be heard. What a pity, that the laſt was " not firſt, and the firſt laſt!" Letter CCCXXXIX.

conſequence

conſequence of all this, was, an open breach. Mr. *Whitefield* retired thoughtful and uneaſy to his cloſet, and after preaching in the fields, ſat down and dined with them, and then took a final leave *(t)*.

Many waited at *Edinburgh* to know the iſſue of the conference, who were not diſappointed in the event. Thither he returned, after preaching at *Innerkeithing*, and the *Queen*'s-*ferry*; and continued preaching always twice, often thrice, (and once, ſeven times a day) for ſome weeks together. The churches were open, but not being able to hold half the congregations, he generally preached twice a day in the Orphan-Hoſpital Park to many thouſands. Perſons of the beſt faſhion, as well as of the meaner rank, attended *(u)*; at ſome of their houſes he generally expounded every evening. And every day, almoſt, there were new evidences of the ſucceſs of his labours. Num-

(t) "Having dropt ſomething about perſons building "a *Babel*, Miſtreſs ——— ſaid, It was a hard ſay-"ing. Upon which, I replied, I feared it was a true "one, and that they would find the *Babel* fall down "about their ears. I was never received into their "houſe any more. Thus was I called to make ano-"ther ſacrifice of my affections. But what I had met "with in *England*, made this the more eaſy." M. S.
See alſo Letter CCCXLVII. to Mr. *D. E. Auguſt* 13, 1741; and to the Rev. Mr. *R. E. Auguſt* 24.

(u) Among his particular friends were the Marquis of *Lothian*, the Earl of *Leven*, Lord *Rae*, Lady *Mary Hamilton*, Lady *Frances Gardiner*, Lady *Jean Nimmo*, Lady *Dirleton*. See his Letters from *Auguſt* to *December* 1741.

bers

bers of miniſters *(x)* and ſtudents came to hear him, and aged, experienced chriſtians told him, they could ſet their ſeal to what he preached.

In this firſt viſit to *Scotland*, he preached at *Edinburgh*, *Glaſgow*, *Aberdeen*, *Dundee*, *Paiſley*, *Perth*, *Sterling*, *Crief*, *Falkirk*, *Airth*, *Kinglaſſie*, *Aberdeen*, *Culroſs*, *Kinroſs*, *Couper of Fife*; and alſo, at *Stonehive*, *Benholm*, *Montroſe*, *Brechin*, *Forfar*, *Couper of Angus*; and at *Innerkeithing*, *Newbottle*, *Galaſhields*, *Maxton*, and *Haddington*; and in the weſt country, at *Killern*, *Fintry*, and *Balfrone*. To other places to which he was invited, he did not go *(y)* at this time. But (having collected above five hundred pounds, in money and goods, for his Orphans) he left *Edinburgh* in the latter end of *October*, to go through *Wales*, in his way to *London*.

(x) Particularly, o Mr. *Wilſon* of *Maxton*. See Letter CCCXXXVIII.

(y) Among theſe was *Cambuſlang*, and ſome places in the north of *Scotland*. See Letter CCCLIX. wherein he mentions an invitation from the miniſters of the Preſbytery, that meets at *Dornoch* in *Sutherland*.

CHAP.

CHAP. VIII.

Letters from Miniſters and private Chriſtians in Scotland, *repreſenting Mr.* Whitefield's *reception and ſucceſs there, in the Year* 1741.

HIS reception, miniſtrations, and ſucceſs at the principal places in *Scotland*, will farther appear from the following Letters.

At *Edinburgh*, one of the miniſters of that city thus writes to him. " *April* 20, 1742 (z). Rev. " and Dear Sir, Knowing that many are careful to " inform you, from time to time, what paſſes " here, I have hitherto delayed anſwering your " moſt acceptable Letter, until I ſhould tell you " with the greateſt certainty, what were the " bleſſed effects of your miniſtrations amongſt " us; and can now aſſure you, that they were " not more ſurprizing than laſting. I don't know, " or hear of any wrought upon by your miniſtry, " but are holding on in the paths of truth and " righteouſneſs. They ſeem poſſeſſed of a truly " chriſtian ſpirit. *Jeſus* is precious to their ſouls; " and like the morning light, they are advancing " with increaſing brightneſs to the perfect day.

(z) *Glaſgow* Weekly Hiſtory, No. XXVII.

" Since

" Since you left *Scotland*, numbers in different " corners have been awakened. Many in a hope- " ful way. Religion in this ſinful city revives " and flouriſhes. Ordinances are more punctu- " ally attended on. People hear the word with " gladneſs, and receive it in faith and love. " New meetings for prayer and ſpiritual confe- " rence are erecting every where. Religious con- " verſation has baniſhed ſlander and calumny from " ſeveral tea-tables, and chriſtians are not aſhamed " to own their dear Lord and Maſter. Praiſe is " perfected out of the mouths of babes and " ſucklings; and ſome ſtout-hearted ſinners capti- " vated to the obedience of *Chriſt*.

" I cannot eaſily expreſs, with what pleaſure " I write theſe things; and doubtleſs, they will " give you no leſs joy in reading them. Should " not theſe droppings of the dew of heaven en- " courage our faith and hope of a plentiful effu- " ſion of the ſpirit, which will at once change our " barren wilderneſs into a fruitful field? Should " not this haſten your return, that we may take " ſweet counſel together, and enter into the houſe " of God in company? You are often on our " hearts. We long to ſee you face to face. " May much of your great Maſter's preſence ever " attend, and come along with you."

Mr. *George Muir*, (afterwards the Rev. Doctor *Muir*, late miniſter of *Paiſley)* thus wrote to *James Aitken*, ſchool-maſter in *Glaſgow (a)*. " *Edin-*

(*a*) *Prince*'s Chriſtian Hiſtory, No. XXXIV.

" *Edinburgh*, *Auguſt* 8, 1743. As you deſire, I " have with the aſſiſtance of Mr. *Archibald Bowie*, " Mr. *Dun*, and the *(b)* Serjeant, informed my- " ſelf a little, with reſpect to the number and " ſituations of the praying Societies in this place, " which you will take as follows: They are, as " near as we can gueſs, between twenty-four and " thirty in number, ſome of which will neceſ- " ſarily be obliged to divide, by reaſon of too " many meeting together; and that will increaſe " the number. Amongſt them are ſeveral meet- " ings of boys and girls, who, in general, ſeem " not only to be growing in grace, but really in- " creaſing in knowledge. The little lambs ap- " pear to be unwilling to reſt upon duties, or " any thing ſhort of *Chriſt*; as a young gentle- " man of my acquaintance told me, when under " a temptation to think, that he was ſurely ſeek- " ing ſome imaginary refuge, inſtead of the Sa- " viour, he was made to cry out in prayer, ' Lord, I want nothing elſe, and will have no- ' thing ſhort of the very *Chriſt* of God.' " There " are ſeveral meetings of young women, who " (although I never, as yet, viſited any of them) " I am informed, hold on very well. The Ser- " jeant tells me, that at one of theſe meetings, " on the morning of the Lord's-day, he has " known them all wet with floods of tears, melted " down with love to *Chriſt*, and affection to one " another for *Chriſt*'s ſake. I have myſelf been

(b) See Letter CCCCXXII.

" much raviſhed (when in a meeting in the room " below, where ſome of theſe reſort) to hear " them ſing the Lord's praiſes with ſuch melo- " dious voices. There are numbers of young " men who meet for the excellent purpoſe of " glorifying God, and promoting chriſtian know- " ledge; amongſt ſome of whom I have the " honour to be a member; many of them are " Divines, who are uſeful in inſtructing the " weaker ſort of us; and that they endeavour to " do with the greateſt anxiety and deſire. A " good number of old men, ſubſtantial, ſtand- " ing chriſtians, meet for their edification and " inſtruction (the glory of their God being al- " ways their chief end), and are thereby often " revived, and very much refreſhed. The gene- " rality of theſe ſorts, above-mentioned, do walk " very circumſpectly, and really make it ap- " pear to the world, that they have been with " *Jeſus:* which is very much evidenced in their " chearfully bearing reproaches for *Chriſt*'s ſake. " And upon the whole, we hope there is ſuch a " flame kindled, as ſhall never be extinguiſhed. " And with reſpect to two particular ſocieties, " whereof Mr. *Bowie* is a member, he gave me " the incloſed (*c*) in writing; which you will pe- " ruſe

(*c*) To Mr. *Muir*. " *Edinburgh, Auguſt* 6, 1743. " As you deſire a ſhort account of the two ſocieties I " am concerned in, I ſhall give it in a very few words. " They conſiſt of twenty-five, or twenty-ſix members " each;

" ruſe and return. This is not all; for ſeveral
" country people are beginning to aſſemble toge-
" ther in little meetings, to worſhip their God:
" particularly, the Serjeant informs me of one
" about two miles from this place, where ſeveral
" ploughmen, and other illiterate perſons, meet
" for the moſt noble ends and purpoſes; and are
" going moſt ſweetly on, much increaſed in
" grace and knowledge, and ſome are daily ad-
" ded to their number. I am informed from the
" eaſt country, (where there have been no ſo-
" cieties ſince the ſeceſſion) that about *Old Cam-*

" each; and, except a very few, are all perſons whoſe
" concern about religion, began in the late awakening.
" I never ſaw the ends of ſuch ſocieties anſwered near
" ſo well, as among theſe. I think, I may ſafely de-
" clare, that I was never witneſs to ſo much of real
" chriſtian exerciſe among any perſons I have known,
" as I have obſerved, to my great ſatisfaction, among
" moſt of them. It is moſt amazing to obſerve, how
" much ſome of them, who at their firſt concern, were
" brutiſhly ignorant of every thing good, have now
" made ſuch advances in knowledge, that they excel
" thoſe who were formerly far before them. The con-
" cern about their own ſalvation is not only remarkable,
" but the abiding earneſtneſs they ſhow in their prayers,
" for the increaſe of the Redeemer's kingdom, is moſt
" deſirable; and the care they ſhow in watching over
" one another, is one convincing evidence of their bro-
" therly love, and true chriſtian tenderneſs. I might
" ſay a great deal more, but muſt conclude. I am, &c.
" *A. Bowie.*"

There is alſo notice taken of ſome remarkable converſions, and of the reformation obſerved in the *Edinburgh* Hoſpitals, in Numbers X. XI. XV. of *Glaſgow* Weekly Hiſtory.

" *bus*, ſix miles from *Dunbar*, many are now " meeting together for ſocial prayer, and mutual " converſation about matters of religion, where- " in the Lord is with them of a truth. And in " that place, there is more eager thirſting for " the word, than uſual, and the miniſters are " learning to ſpeak with new tongues. And one " of my acquaintance, who was in this place " laſt winter, has happily been the Lord's inſtru- " ment in beginning theſe ſocieties. How beau- " tiful and refreſhing is it, my dear friend, to " hear of ſo many following after the deſpiſed " *Jeſus?* Should we not take it as a token for " good, that young ones, inſtead of ſpending " their ſpare hours in idle, vain, and unprofit- " able play, do now aſſemble, and join in calling " upon the Lord. Is it not a good ſign to hear " many poor fooliſh virgins, (inſtead of being " employed in the vanities of the generality of " their ſex) meeting together for prayer; and " many prodigal youths, inſtead of revelling, and " drunkenneſs, chambering, and wantonneſs, now " breathing after the knowledge of *Jeſus Chriſt*, " and him crucified? O that the Lord would " more and more exert his almighty power " amongſt us. There are ſeveral other ſocieties " for prayer, near about this city, proſpering very " well."

The Rev. Mr. *Mac Culloch* of *Cambuſlang*, thus writes to Mr. *Whitefield*, a few months after his

firſt

firſt viſit to *Glaſgow (d)*; " As it is matter of " great joy and thankfulneſs to God, who ſent " you here, and gave you ſo much countenance, " and ſo remarkably crowned your labours when " here at *Glaſgow* with ſucceſs; ſo I doubt not " but the following account, of the many ſeals to " your miniſtry in and about that city, will be " very rejoicing to your heart, as our glorious " Redeemer's Kingdom is ſo much advanced, and " the everlaſting happineſs of immortal ſouls " promoted.

" I am well informed by ſome miniſters, and " other judicious and experienced chriſtians, that " there are to the number of fifty perſons already " got notice of, in and about *Glaſgow*, that by all " that can be judged by perſons of the beſt diſ- " cerning in ſpiritual things, are ſavingly con- " verted, by the bleſſing and power of God, ac- " companying your ten ſermons in that place; " beſides ſeveral others under convictions, not " reckoned in this number, whoſe ſtate remains, " as yet, a little doubtful. And beſides, ſeveral " chriſtians of conſiderable ſtanding, who were " much ſtrengthened, revived, and comforted, " by means of hearing your ſermons; being " made to rejoice in hope of the glory of God, " having obtained the full aſſurance of faith.

" Among thoſe lately converted, here are ſeve- " ral young people who were formerly openly

(*d*) *Glaſgow* Weekly Hiſtory, No. XIII.

" wicked and flagitious, or at beſt but very ne-
" gligent as to ſpiritual concerns, but are now in
" the way of ſalvation. Some young converts
" are yet under doubts and fears; but a conſi-
" derable number of them have attained to joy
" and peace in believing.

" Several lately wrought upon in a gracious
" way, ſeem to outſtrip chriſtians of conſiderable
" ſtanding, in ſpiritual-mindedneſs, and many
" other good qualifications: and particularly, in
" their zeal for the converſion of others, and love
" to the ordinances, without a ſpirit of bigotry,
" or party zeal.

" Theſe converts by your miniſtry are diſ-
" covered from time to time; a good many are but
" lately got notice of, that were not known be-
" fore; which was partly occaſioned by their con-
" victions not being ſo ſtrong and pungent at the
" firſt, as they proved afterwards, partly by the
" diſcouragement they met with in the families
" where they reſided, and partly by the reſerv-
" ed tempers of the perſons themſelves, and
" their baſhfulneſs, becauſe of their former ne-
" gligences and open enormities. Theſe things
" give ground to hope, there may be more diſ-
" covered afterwards, that are not yet known.

" Beſides theſe awakened, by the power of
" God accompanying your ſermons, there are
" others awakened ſince, by means of the great
" viſible change diſcovered in their former inti-
" mate acquaintance, that were then converted,

" when

" when they saw the change so remarkable, and " the effects so abiding.

" Young converts are exceeding active to pro- " mote the conversion of others, especially their " relations and near concerns, by their exhorta- " tions, and letters to distant friends in the coun- " try; and there are some instances of the good " effects of these endeavours.

" They have all a great love to one another, " and all good christians, and a great sympathy " with such of their number, as are under doubts " and fears. Such of them as have not received " comfort, by their earnest and deep concern, " and close attendance on the means of grace, " are hereby instrumental to excite christians of " elder standing, to more diligence in religion.

" These, dear Brother, are a few hints of some " of the most remarkable things, as to the suc- " cess of your labours at *Glasgow*, by the Divine " Blessing. May a rich and powerful blessing, " give a plentiful increase to them every where, " where you come with the glad tidings of the " great salvation."

At *Aberdeen*, one of the ministers of that city, " thus writes of him, to a person of distinction. " *October* 3, 1741 *(e)*. Honoured Sir, At your " desire, I shall not refuse, (however much rea- " son I may have for declining to offer my judg- " ment, or opinion, in things of this nature) to

(e) Glasgow Weekly History, No. XXVIII.

" acquaint you freely of what I think of the " Rev. Mr. *Whitefield*, or rather what is the " opinion of perſons of more acquaintance with " the good ways of God.

" He is, I believe, juſtly eſteemed by all who " are perſonally acquainted with him, an eminent " inſtrument of reviving, in theſe declining " times, a juſt ſenſe and concern for the great " things of religion. We have, of late, been " much employed, and a great noiſe has been " made about the leſſer matters of the law: and " are now much broken in judgment about " things, many of which, I muſt own, I do not " underſtand *(f)*. The cry has been, and ſtill " continues loud, ' Lo here is *Chriſt*, and lo there.'

(f) Of thoſe who differed from their brethren, as to their judgment about many things, was Mr. *B*——, one of the miniſters of *Aberdeen*. After he had prayed and preached againſt Mr. *Whitefield*, in his hearing, and quoted ſome paſſages of his firſt printed ſermons, as heterodox: Sermon being ended, Mr. *Ogilvie* gave notice, That Mr. *Whitefield* would preach in about half an hour. The interval being ſo ſhort, the magiſtrates retired into the Seſſion-houſe, and the congregation patiently waited, " big with expectation, (ſays Mr. *Whitefield)* of hearing my reſentment. At the time appointed, I went " up, and took no other notice of the good man's ill-" timed zeal, than to obſerve in ſome part of my diſ-" courſe, That if the good old gentleman had ſeen ſome " of my later writings, wherein I had corrected ſeveral " of my former miſtakes, he would not have expreſt " himſelf in ſuch ſtrong terms. The people being thus " diverted from controverſy with man, were deeply im-" preſſed with what they heard from the word of God." Letter CCCLXI.

" And

" And now the Lord has raiſed up this eminent " inſtrument, from a quarter, whence we could " not have expected it, to call us all to return to " him; from whom, it is plain, we have deeply " revolted. His being by education and pro- " feſſion of a different way, from what, I cannot " but think, is moſt juſtly profeſſed among us, " ſeems to me, to add no ſmall weight to his " teſtimony; as does alſo his age. The Lord by " this is, as it were, attracting our eyes and at- " tention to one, who, had he been formerly of " us, would doubtleſs, like others, be deſpiſed. " And yet, I cannot but look upon it as a ſad in- " ſtance of a departing God, that, inſtead of " regard, he meets not only with contempt, but " with oppoſition alſo, from thoſe who ought to " act a very different part. Did he preach ano- " ther *Jeſus*, or another doctrine, he ought juſtly " to be rejected: but this is not the caſe. And " yet this very thing is advanced as an argument " againſt him: It is ſaid, he advances nothing " new. And I allow it. This gives his friends " joy. But theſe reverend gentlemen ſhould " mind, that there are two things in Goſpel " ordinances, purity and power. The firſt, in " mercy, we ſtill have in ſome good meaſure (tho' " complaints of the want of this are very open); " but the laſt, we ſadly confeſs the want of, and " this is what attends the Goſpel diſpenſed by him. " And ſure, I am, that even the credible report " of it ſhould much endear him to all, who wiſh

" well

" well to the intereſt of our dear, tho' too un-
" known, and altogether lovely Lord *Jeſus*.

" His calmneſs and ſerenity under all he meets
" with, yea his joy in tribulation, is to me ſo
" ſurpriſing, that I often think, the Lord ſent
" him to this place, in particular, to teach me
" how to preach, and eſpecially how to ſuffer.

" His attachment to no party, but to *Chriſt*
" and true Grace alone, has long appeared to me
" a peculiar excellency in him. Chriſtianity has
" been ſo long broken into ſo many different
" ſects and parties, that an honeſt pagan might
" juſtly be at a loſs, was he among us, where to
" find the religion of *Jeſus*.

" One now appears, who loudly calls us (and
" whoſe voice the Lord ſeems to back with power)
" to look into the original plan of that religion
" we profeſs: ſure nothing more juſt, nothing
" more reaſonable. He tells us, wherein the
" Kingdom of God does conſiſt. And yet how
" ſad is it, he ſhould be deſpiſed. Who knows
" but this may be the Lord's laſt voice to us,
" before he takes his kingdom from us?

" As to what you aſk of his reception in this
" city; I invited him, nay, urged him, to un-
" dertake this journey, in conſequence of a cor-
" reſpondence with him, for more than two or
" three years. I did it with the concurrence of a
" very few. His journey was delayed, till bad
" reports had imbittered the minds of almoſt all
" againſt him: ſo that when he came, I could
" ſcarce

" ſcarce obtain liberty for him to preach even in " the fields. All that I could do, was what I " had reſolved long before; I gave him with great " pleaſure, and full freedom, my pulpit, which, " for that day, was in the church which our " magiſtrates and principal people of note fre- " quent. And at once, the Lord, by his preach- " ing, melted down the hearts of his enemies, " (except ——— and ———); ſo that, con- " trary to our cuſtom, he was allowed the ſame " place and pulpit in the evening of that day, " and the other church as often as he pleaſed.

" While he ſtayed among us in this city, he " anſwered our expectations ſo much, that he has " ſcarce more friends any where of its bulk, " than here, where, at firſt, almoſt all were a- " gainſt him. And the word came alſo with ſo " much power, that I hope ſeveral of different " denominations, will bleſs the Lord for ever- " more, that ever they heard him. And in his " way from us, I ſaw in part, and have heard " more fully ſince, what ſatisfies, that this was " of the Lord, and for the good of many." " *P. S.* I ſuppoſe you have heard, that our ma- " giſtrates waited on him while here, and made " him free of this place; though that is a com- " pliment, rarely allowed to ſtrangers, of late."

Mr. *Williſon*, miniſter at *Dundee*, wrote as follows, to his friend at *Edinburgh*. " *October* 8, " 1741 (*g*). Honoured Sir, I am favoured with

(*g*) *Glaſgow* Weekly Hiſtory, No. XIII.

" yours,

" yours, wherein you desire my thoughts of Mr
" *Whitefield*, and an account of his labours and
" success with us. Although my sentiments may
" be little regarded by many, yet when you put
" me to it, I think I am bound to do justice to
" the character of this stranger, which I see few
" willing to do. I am not much surprized,
" though the Devil, and all he can influence, be
" up in arms against the youth, seeing he makes
" such bold and vigorous attacks upon his king-
" dom and strong holds. As you, Sir, do ob-
" serve it to be with you, so it is with us. He is
" hated, and spoken against, by all the episcopal
" party, and even the most of our clergy do
" labour to diminish and expose him: this is not
" to be much wondered at, seeing his incessant
" labours for *Christ* and souls, is such a strong
" reproof to them; besides, what he says pub-
" licly, against the sending out of unconverted
" ministers, and their preaching an unknown
" *Christ*; this must be galling to carnal men. I
" look upon this youth, as raised up of God
" for special service, and spirited for making new
" and singular attempts, for promoting true
" christianity in the world, and for reviving it
" where it is decayed; and I see him wonder-
" fully fitted and strengthened, both in body and
" mind, for going through with his projects,
" amidst the greatest discouragements and diffi-
" culties. I see the man to be all of a piece;
" his life and conversation to be a transcript of

" his

" his ſermons. It is truly a rare thing, to ſee " ſo much of God about any one man. To ſee " one ſo eminent for humility, in the midſt of " applauſe; for meekneſs and patience, under " reproaches and injuries; for love to enemies; " for deſire to glorify *Chriſt*, and ſave ſouls; " contentment in a mean lot, acquieſcing in the " will of God in all caſes, never fretting under " any diſpenſation, but ſtill praiſing and giving " thanks for every thing. It is rare to ſee in a " man, ſuch a flaming fire for God and againſt " ſin, when in the pulpit; and yet moſt eaſy and " calm in converſing with men out of it; care- " ful not to give offence to them, and yet never " courting the favour of any. God has beſtow- " ed a large meaſure of gifts and graces upon " him, for the work he is engaged in, and has " made him a choſen veſſel, to carry his name " among the *Gentiles*, and to revive his work in " ſeveral other churches. O that God may order " his coming to poor *Scotland*, in ſuch a cloudy " time, for the ſame end! And who knows, but " God might be intreated, if we could wreſtle " with him, notwithſtanding all our provoca- " tions! Things appeared moſt unlikely, in other " places, ſome while ago, where now *Chriſt* is " riding in triumph, going forth conquering " and to conquer. This worthy youth, is ſingu- " larly fitted to do the work of an Evangeliſt; and " I have been long of opinion, that it would " be for the advantage of the world, were this

" ſtill

" ſtill to be a ſtanding office in the church. And " ſeeing the Lord has ſtirred him up to ven- " ture his life, reputation, and his all for *Chriſt*; " refuſe the beſt benefices in his own country, " and run all hazards by ſea and land, and travel " ſo many thouſand miles to proclaim the glory " of *Chriſt*, and riches of his free-grace, of " which he himſelf is a monument; and eſpe- " cially, ſeeing God has honoured him to do all " this with ſuch ſurpriſing ſucceſs, among ſinners " of all ranks and perſuaſions, and even many of " the moſt notorious, in awakening and turning " them to the Lord; I truly think we are alſo " bound to honour him, and to eſteem him high- " ly in love for his maſter's, and for his work's " ſake, according to 1 *Theſſ.* v. 13. And for " thoſe who vilify and oppoſe him, I wiſh they " would even notice a *Gamaliel*'s words, *Acts* v. ' Let him alone, leſt haply ye be found to fight ' againſt God :' " Or rather, that they would re- " gard the Apoſtle *Peter*'s words, apologizing for " his going in with the uncircumciſed, *Acts* xi. " when the Holy Ghoſt fell upon them; ' What ' was I that I could withſtand God?' " I have " myſelf been witneſs to the Holy Ghoſt falling " upon him and his hearers oftner than once, " I do not ſay in a miraculous, though in an ob- " ſervable manner. Yea, I have already ſeen " the deſirable fruits thereof in not a few; and " hope, through the divine bleſſing on the ſeed " ſown, to ſee more. Many here are bleſſing

" God,

" God, for ſending him to this country, though " Satan has raged much againſt it.

" The Lord is a ſovereign agent, and may " raiſe up the inſtruments of his glory, from " what churches or places he pleaſes; and glori- " fies his grace the more, when he does it from " thoſe ſocieties, whence and when it could be " leaſt expected. Though Mr. *Whitefield* be or- " dained, according to his education, a miniſter " of the Church of *England*; yet we are to re- " gard him as one, whom God has raiſed up, to " witneſs againſt the corruptions of that Church; " whom God is ſtill enlightening, and cauſing to " make advances towards us. He has already " conformed to us, both in doctrine and worſhip, " and lies open to light to conform to us in other " points. He is thoroughly a Calviniſt, and " ſound to the doctrines of Free Grace, in the " doctrine of Original Sin, the New Birth, juſti- " fication by *Chriſt*, the neceſſity of imputed " Righteouſneſs, the operations of the Holy " Ghoſt, &c. Theſe he makes his great theme, " drives the point home to the conſcience, and " God attends it with great power. And as God " has enlightened him gradually in theſe things, " ſo he is ſtill ready to receive more light, and " ſo ſoon as he gets it, he is moſt frank in de- " claring it.

" God, by owning him ſo wonderfully, is " pleaſed to give a rebuke to our intemperate " bigotry, and party-zeal, and to tell us, that

" neither circumcision nor uncircumcision availeth " any thing, but the new creature." " *P. S.* " Many with us are for preferring ministers, ac- " cording to the party they are of, but commend " me to a pious, *Christ*-exalting, and soul-win- " ning minister, whatever be his denomination. " Such are ministers of *Christ*'s sending, and of " such he saith, ' He that receiveth you, re- " ceiveth me, and he that despiseth you, des- " piseth me;" which is a rule of duty to " us *(h)*."

The

(*h*) The compiler lately received a transcript, from the diary of a very worthy christian in *Edinburgh*, who died about two years ago, in which are the following " passages. " *Sabbati*, *August* 9, 1741. What is sur- " prizing, is, that numbers of all ranks, all denomi- " nations, and all characters, come constantly to hear " him, though his sermons abound with those truths " which would be unwelcome from the mouth of others. " He is indefatigable in his work. Three hours before " noon he appoints, for people under distress to con- " verse with him, when he is much confined. Then " he writes numbers of letters. And this week he is " to add a morning lecture to his work. I have reason, " among many others, for blessing GOD, for sending " him to this place."

" *Sabbati*, *August* 30, 1741. Mr. *W*———*d* preach- " ed *Monday* morning and afternoon, *Tuesday* forenoon " in the *Canongate* Church, evening in the park, and " gathered 25 *l.* 7 *s.* 6 *d.* for the poor Highlanders. " Next day he went to *Newbottle*, and preached twice. " On *Thursday* to *Whitburn*; *Friday* morning at *Torphi-* " *chen*; *Friday* evening at *Linlithgow*; *Saturday* morning " and afternoon, both at *Falkirk*. And this day he is " at *Airth*. To-morrow he will preach twice at *Stir-* " *ling*. *Culross*, *Tuesday* forenoon; *Dumfermlin*, after-

 " noon.

The four preceding letters ſhew the acceptableneſs and ſucceſs of Mr. *Whitefield*'s miniſtrations in

" noon. *Wedneſday*, twice at *Kinroſs*. *Thurſday*, *Perth*. " From *Friday* to *Monday*, at *Dundee*. *Monday*, *Kinglaſſie*, and came to *Edinburgh* on *Tueſday*. Bleſſed be " GOD, he ſeldom preaches without ſome one or other " laid under concern. Surely GOD has ſent him to this " place for good. The Devil never raged more by his " emiſſaries. It is remarkable, there never was a miniſter, no nor any other man, againſt whom the mouths " of the licentious have been more opened. Since he " came, I have found myſelf more deſirous to be watchful, leſt my foot ſlip at any time, and to guard againſt " many things, which before I thought indifferent.

" *Thurſday*, *October* 29, 1741. Yeſterday Mr. *Whitefield* left this place, to return to *England*. His departure was a great grief to many, whom the LORD " has mercifully awakened, under his miniſtry, the " number of which, I believe, is very great. Mr. " *W——r* alone, among about thirty young communicants that came to converſe with him, found about a " dozen, who told him, They were firſt effectually " touched under his miniſtry; and gave very good accounts of a work of GOD upon their ſouls. Some of " the moſt abandoned wretches are brought to cry, ' What ſhall I do to be ſaved?' " I have often had the " opportunity of converſation with him, and, I think, " I never heard him, or converſed with him, but I " learned ſome good leſſon. I do not remember to have " heard one idle word drop from him, in all the times I " have been in company with him; and others, that " have been much more with him, give him the ſame " teſtimony. On *Tueſday* laſt, he preached and exhorted " ſeven times. I heard him to my great ſatisfaction the " fourth time, in the park. From that he went to the " Old People's Hoſpital, to give them an exhortation; " but indeed, I never was witneſs to any thing of the " kind before. All the congregation (for many followed him) were ſo moved, that very few, if any, could

in moſt of the great towns in *Scotland.* As to ſmaller places, the following extract of a Letter from the Rev. Mr. *Thomas Davidſon* (his fellow-traveller) to the Rev. Mr. *Henry Davidſon* of *Gal-*

" refrain from crying out. I am ſure, the Kingdom of " GOD was then come nigh unto them, and that a woe " will be unto them that ſlighted the offers of a Saviour " then made to them. From that, he went to *Heriot*'s " Hoſpital, where a great change is wrought upon many " of the boys; for there, as well as in the Maiden-" Hoſpitals, Fellowſhip-meetings are ſet up, which " is quite new there; for the boys of that Hoſpi-" tal were noted for the wickedeſt boys about town. " I was with him in a private houſe in the evening. " When he came there, he was quite worn out. How-" ever, he expounded there, which was the ſeventh diſ-" courſe that day; and, what was very ſurprizing, he " was much freſher after he had done, than at the be-" ginning.

" *November* 29, 1741. I had agreeable accounts of " ſome of the children who were wrought upon by the " miniſtry of Mr. *W——d.* I heard this day of a good " many, that I heard not of formerly, who were not " only laid under concern, but ſeemed to have a work " of grace wrought upon their heart, appearing by a " moſt remarkable change in their converſation, and " eager deſires after farther degrees of knowledge of " the LORD's ways, which leads them to attend every " opportunity they can have for inſtruction.

" *Sabbati, December* 6, 1741. Since Mr. *Whitefield*'s " coming here, I find chriſtians freer in converſation " than formerly; which is a great mercy both to them-" ſelves, and all about them; the experience of which " I have had by this paſt week, in ſeveral places where " I have been. I had occaſion to ſee a ſoldier, who was " lately wrought upon by Mr. *Whitefield*'s means. He " ſeems to have come a great length in a little time, " and gives a very judicious account of the LORD's " dealings with his ſoul."

laſhiels,

Ashiels, dated *Culross*, *December* 3, 1741, will be an agreeable specimen.

" Our journey to the North was as comfort-
" able as any we had. In several places as he
" came along, the Lord I thought countenanced
" him in a very convincing manner, particularly
" at a place called *Lundie*, five miles north from
" *Dundee*, where there is a considerable number
" of serious christians, who hearing that he was
" to come that way, spent most part of the night
" before in prayer together. Although his
" preaching there was only in a passing way,
" having to ride to *Dundee* after it, and it was
" betwixt three and four before he reached the
" place; yet he had but scarce well begun, be-
" fore the power of God was indeed very discerni-
" ble. Never did I see such a pleasing melting
" in a worshipping assembly. There was nothing
" violent in it, or like what we may call screwing
" up the passions: for it evidently appeared to be
" deep and hearty, and to proceed from a higher
" spring."

As a conclusion of this article, concerning Mr. *Whitefield*'s first reception and ministrations in *Scotland*, the reader will not be displeased to see the following extract from the papers of a gentleman deceased, who was eminent for learning and knowledge of the world, and who had a general acquaintance with those who professed the greatest regard to religion.

" Meſſieurs *Ebenezer* and *Ralph Erſkine* cor-
" reſpondeded with him for two or three years,
" and invited him to *Scotland*. But afterwards
" reflecting that if they held communion with an
" epiſcopal miniſter, becauſe a good man and
" ſucceſsful preacher, they could not vindicate
" their renouncing communion with ſuch mi-
" niſters in the Church of *Scotland:* They wrote
" to him not to come. However, on the invita-
" tion of ſome miniſters and people of the eſta-
" bliſhed Church he came, and preached his firſt
" ſermon in Mr. *Ralph Erſkine*'s pulpit at *Dum-*
" *fermlin* (a town ten or twelve miles from *Edin-*
" *burgh* on the other ſide of *Forth.)* At a ſecond
" viſit to *Dumfermlin*, he had a conference with all
" the ſeceeding brethren, where he honeſtly
" avowed that he was a member of the Church
" of *England*, and as he thought the Government
" and Worſhip of it lawful, was reſolved, unleſs
" violently thruſt out of it, to continue ſo, re-
" buking ſin and preaching *Chriſt:* And told
" them he reckoned the Solemn League and Co-
" venant a ſinful oath, as too much narrowing the
" communion of ſaints, and that he could not ſee
" the divine right of Preſbytery. On this they
" came to a preſbyterial reſolution to have no more
" to do with him; and one of them preached a ſer-
" mon to ſhew that one who held communion
" with the Church of *England*, or backſlidden
" Church of *Scotland*, could not be an inſtrument
" of

" of reformation. This, however, did not hinder " multitudes, both of the Seceders and eſtabliſh- " ed Church of *Scotland*, from hearing his ſer- " mons. His ſoundneſs in the faith, his fervent " zeal, and unwearied diligence for promoting " the cauſe of *Chriſt*; the plainneſs and ſimplici- " ty, the affection and warmth of his ſermons; " and the amazing power that had accompanied " them in many parts of *England*, and in almoſt " all the *North American* Colonies, joined to his " meekneſs, humility, and truly candid and ca- " tholic ſpirit, convinced them there was reaſon " to think well of him, and to countenance his " miniſtry. Converſions were become rare, little " livelineſs was to be found even in real chriſtians, " and bigotry and blind zeal were producing ani- " moſities and diviſions, and turning away the " attention of good men from matters of infi- " nitely greater importance. In this ſituation, " an animated preacher appears, ſingularly qua- " lified to awaken the ſecure, to recover chriſtians " to their firſt love, and firſt works, and to recon- " cile their affections one to another.

" The epiſcopal clergy gave him no counte- " nance, though ſome few of their people did. " And in the eſtabliſhed Church of *Scotland*, ſome " of the more rigid preſbyterians would not hold " communion with him, on account of his con- " nection with the Church of *England*, and his " ſeeming to aſſume the office of an Evangeliſt,

" peculiar, in their apprehenſion, to the firſt " ages of the church: while ſome, who affected " to be thought more ſenſible, or more modiſh " and polite, were mightily diſſatisfied with him " for preaching the *Calviniſt* Doctrines of Elec- " tion, Original Sin, Efficacious Grace, Juſti- " fication through Faith, and the Perſeverance " of the Saints; and for inveighing againſt the " play-houſe, dancing aſſemblies, games of chance, " haunting taverns, vanity and extravagance in " dreſs, and levity in behaviour and conver- " ſation.

" Some gentlemen and ladies who went to " hear, would not go a ſecond time, becauſe " he diſturbed them, by inſiſting on man's mi- " ſerable and dangerous ſtate by nature, and " the ſtrictneſs and holineſs eſſential to the " chriſtian character. But upon many of his " hearers in *Edinburgh*, of all ranks and ages, " eſpecially young people, deep impreſſions " were made, and many of them waited on " him privately, lamenting their former im- " moral lives, or ſtupid thoughtleſneſs about reli- " gion, and expreſſing their anxious concern about " obtaining an intereſt in *Chriſt*, and the ſancti- " fying influences of the Spirit. In the greateſt " part of theſe, the impreſſions have appeared " to be ſaving, from their circumſpect exem- " plary conduct ſince that time, or from their " comfortable, or triumphant deaths. Many

" Prebyterians

" Preſbyterians begin to think more mildly and " candidly than before, of the miniſters and " members of the Church of *England (i).*"

(*i*) This year, 1741. he received the compliment of honorary Burgeſs Tickets from the Towns of *Stirling*, *Glaſgow*, *Paiſley*, and *Aberdeen*. And in 1742, from *Irvine*. And 1762, from *Edinburgh*.

CHAP. IX.

From his leaving Edinburgh 1741, *to his Return to that City in the Year* 1742.

MR. *Whitefield* having left *Edinburgh* in the latter end of *October* 1741, ſet out for *Abergavenny* in *Wales*, where, having ſome time ago formed a reſolution to enter into the married ſtate, he married one Mrs. *James* (*k*), a widow between thirty and forty years of age; of whom he ſays (Letter CCCLXXVI.) "She has been a houſe-"keeper many years, once gay, but for three "years laſt paſt, a deſpiſed follower of the Lamb "of God." From *Abergavenny* he went to *Briſtol*, where he preached twice a day with his uſual ſucceſs. Upon returning to *London* in the beginning of *December*, he received letters from *Georgia* concerning his orphan-family, which, with reſpect to their external circumſtances, were a little diſcouraging. On the other hand, he had moſt comfortable accounts of the fruits of his miniſtry in *Scotland*. This made him think of paying another viſit there in the Spring. Mean time, he had the pleaſure of ſeeing his labours attended with the divine bleſſing at *London* and *Briſtol*. And from

(*k*) Her maiden name was *Elizabeth Burnell*.

Glouceſter he thus writes, " *December* 22, 1741, " Laſt *Thurſday* evening the Lord brought me hi- " ther. I preached immediately to our friends in " a large barn, and had my Maſter's preſence. " On *Friday* and *Saturday*, I preached again twice. " Both the power and the congregation increaſed. " On *Sunday* Providence opened a door for my " preaching in St. *John*'s, one of the pariſh " churches. Great numbers came. On *Sunday* " afternoon, after I had preached twice at *Glou-* " *ceſter*, I preached at Mr. *F*——'s at the hill, ſix " miles off, and again at night, at *Stroud*. The " people ſeemed to be more hungry than ever, and " the Lord to be more amongſt them. Yeſterday " morning I preached at *Painſwick* in the pariſh " church, here in the afternoon, and again at " night in the barn. God gives me unſpeakable " comfort, and uninterrupted joy. Here ſeems to " be a new awakening, and a revival of the work " of God. I find ſeveral country people were " awakened when I preached at *Tewkſbury*, and " have heard of three or four that have died in the " Lord. We ſhall never know what good field- " preaching has done, till we come to judgment. " Many, who were prejudiced againſt me, begin " to be of another mind; and God ſhows me more " and more, that when a man's ways pleaſe the " Lord, he will make even his enemies to be at " peace with him. To morrow morning I pur- " poſe to ſet out for *Abergavenny*, and to preach

" at

" at *Briſtol*, in *Wilts*, *Glouceſter*, and *Glouceſterſhire*, " before I ſee *London*."

In the latter end of *December* he came to *Briſtol*, where he continued near a month, preaching twice every day, and writing to his friends in *London* and *Scotland*. He alſo ſet up a general monthly meeting to read correſponding letters. From *Briſtol* he returned to *Glouceſter*, and *January* 28, 1742, writes, (*l*) " On *Friday* laſt I left *Briſtol*, having firſt ſet- " tled affairs, almoſt as I could wiſh. At *Kingſ-* " *wood*, I adminiſtered the ſacrament on *Wed-* " *neſday* night. It was the Lord's paſſover. On " *Thurſday* we had a ſweet love-feaſt; on *Friday* " the Lord was with me twice at *Tockington*; on " *Saturday* morning I broke up ſome fallow ground " at *Newport*; and in the evening preached to " many thouſands at *Stroud*; on *Monday* morning " at *Painſwick*, and ever ſince twice a day here. " Our congregations, I think, are larger than at " *Briſtol*. Every ſermon is bleſſed."

On his way to *London*, *Feb.* 23, he was ſtill farther encouraged by receiving letters from *America*, informing him of the remarkable ſucceſs of the goſpel there, and that God had ſtirred up ſome wealthy friends to aſſiſt his orphans in their late ſtraits (*m*). Upon his return to *London*, he went

(*l*) Letter CCCLXXXIX.

(*m*) " The everlaſting God reward all their benefac- " tors. I find there has been a freſh awakening among " them. I am informed, that twelve negroes, belonging " to a planter lately converted at the Orphan-houſe, are " ſavingly brought home to *Jeſus Chriſt*." Letter CCCXCVIII.

on with greater zeal and ſucceſs, if poſſible, than ever. "Our Saviour (ſays he, writing to a brother (*n*), *April* 6, 1742) is doing great things "in *London* daily. I rejoice to hear that you are "helped in your work. Let this encourage you: "go on, go on; the more we do, the more we "may do for *Jeſus*. I ſleep and eat but little, "and am conſtantly employed from morning till "midnight, and yet my ſtrength is daily renewed. "O free grace! It fires my ſoul, and makes me "long to do ſomething for *Jeſus*. It is true, indeed, I want to go home; but here are ſo many "ſouls ready to periſh for lack of knowledge, "that I am willing to tarry below as long as my "Maſter has work for me."

From this principle of compaſſion to periſhing ſouls, he now ventured to take a very extraordinary ſtep. It had been the cuſtom for many years paſt, in the holiday ſeaſons, to erect booths in *Moorfields*, for mountebanks, players, puppet-ſhows, &c. which were attended from morning till night, by innumerable multitudes of the lower ſort of people. He formed a reſolution to preach the goſpel among them; and executed it. On *Whitmonday*, at ſix o'clock in the morning, attended by a large congregation of praying people, he began. Thouſands, who were waiting there, gaping for their uſual diverſions, all flocked round him. His text was *John* iii. 14. They gazed, they

(*n*) Letter CCCCVII.

liſtened,

liſtened, they wept: and many ſeemed to be ſtung with deep conviction for their paſt ſins. All was huſhed and ſolemn. (*o*) "Being thus encouraged, "(ſays he) I ventured out again at noon, when the "fields were quite full; and could ſcarce help ſmil- "ing, to ſee thouſands, when a merry-andrew was "trumpeting to them, upon obſerving me mount "a ſtand on the other ſide of the field, deſerting "him, till not ſo much as one was left behind, "but all flocked to hear the goſpel. But this, "together with a complaint that they had taken "near twenty or thirty pounds leſs that day than "uſual, ſo enraged the owners of the booths, that "when I came to preach a third time in the even- "ing, in the midſt of the ſermon, a merry-andrew "got up upon a man's ſhoulders, and advancing "near the pulpit, attempted to laſh me with a "long heavy whip ſeveral times. Soon afterwards "they got a recruiting ſerjeant, with his drum, &c. "to paſs through the congregation. But I de- "ſired the people to make way for the King's "officer, which was quietly done. Finding theſe "efforts to fail, a large body, quite on the oppo- "ſite ſide, aſſembled together, and having got a "great pole for their ſtandard, advanced with "ſound of drum, in a very threatening manner, "till they came near the ſkirts of the congrega- "tion. Uncommon courage was given both to "preacher and hearers. I prayed for ſupport and

(*o*) *M. S.* and Letters CCCCXI, CCCCXII.

"de-

" deliverance, and was heard. For juſt as they " approached us with looks full of reſentment, I " know not by what accident, they quarrelled " among themſelves, threw down their ſtaff, and " went their way, leaving, however, many of their " company behind, who, before we had done, I " truſt were brought over to join the beſieged " party. I think I continued in praying, preach- " ing, and ſinging, (for the noiſe was too great at " times to preach) about three hours. We then " retired to the Tabernacle, where thouſands " flocked. We were determined to pray down " the booths; but bleſſed be God, more ſubſtan- " tial work was done. At a moderate computa- " tion, I received (I believe) a thouſand notes " from perſons under conviction; and ſoon after, " upwards of three hundred were received into the " ſociety in one day. Some I married, that had " lived together without marriage. One man had " exchanged his wife for another, and given four- " teen ſhillings in exchange. Numbers, that " ſeemed as it were to have been bred up for *Ty-* " *burn*, were at that time plucked as firebrands " out of the burning."

" I cannot help adding, that ſeveral little boys " and girls, who were fond of ſitting round " me on the pulpit, while I preached, and " handing to me people's notes, though they " were often pelted with eggs, dirt, &c. thrown " at me, never once gave way; but, on the " contrary, every time I was ſtruck, turned up

" their

" their little weeping eyes, and ſeemed to wiſh
" they could receive the blows for me. God
" make them, in their growing years, great and
" living martyrs for him, who out of the mouth
" of babes and ſucklings perfects praiſe."

CHAP.

CHAP. X.

From his Arrival in Scotland 1742, *to his Return to* London *the ſame Year.*

SOON after this, he embarked a ſecond time for *Scotland*, and arrived at *Leith*, *June* 3, 1742 *(p)*.

But here it is proper to take a view of the ſtate of things in that country upon his arrival. It had

(*p*) " *Edinburgh*, *Sabbath*, *June* 6, 1742. On *Thurſday* laſt our dear friend Mr. *Whitefield* returned to this " place, to the great comfort of many honeſt chriſtians, " eſpecially of thoſe to whom he was made a mean of " conviction and converſion when laſt here.—He ſeems " to have improved much in chriſtian knowledge. He " is much refreſhed with the accounts of the work of " God in the weſt country.——I have heard him preach " five excellent diſcourſes, all calculated for the building " up of chriſtians (though he never fails to put in a " word for the conviction of ſinners); and, I think, can " ſay, that I have never heard him without ſome in- " fluence attending his preaching, eſpecially in private " houſes. O may the impreſſions made on my heart " never wear off, leſt at any time I ſhould be in danger " of dropping my watch, and becoming untender."

" *Sabb. October* 17, 1742. It is a great recommend- " ation of Mr. *Whitefield* to me, that though the Sece- " ders give him every bad character that can be deviſed, " viz. a ſorcerer, &c. yet he takes all patiently, and " wherever he goes, ſpeaks well of them, ſo far as he " can: for none can approve of thoſe groſs parts of their " conduct: therefore theſe he chooſes to caſt a mantle " of love over." *Diary*, formerly quoted.

pleaſed

pleaſed God to bleſs his firſt viſit to *Scotland*, not only for the converſion of particular perſons, and the comfort and quickening of private chriſtians, but to rouſe them to more than ordinary concern about the ſalvation of their neighbours, and to excite pious and conſcientious miniſters to greater diligence in their work. Prayers were put up, with ſome degree of faith and hope, that God would now give ſucceſs to their labours; and not ſuffer them always to complain that they ſpent their ſtrength in vain. Nor were theſe prayers long unanſwered: for in the month of *February*, 1742, an extraordinary religious concern began to appear publicly at *Cambuſlang*; and ſoon after at *Kilſyth* and other places: the news of which quickly ſpread through the land, and engaged general attention. Of this, a juſt though ſhort deſcription is given in the following letter, written by the Rev. Mr. *Hamilton* (then miniſter in the Barony pariſh, now in the High-Church of *Glaſgow*) to Mr. *Prince*, miniſter in *Boſton* (*q*). "*Glaſgow*, *Sept.* 13, 1742. "We in the ſouth and weſt of *Scotland*, have great "reaſon to join in thankfulneſs to God, with you, "for the days of the Redeemer's power that we "are favoured with. Mr. *Whitefield* came to *Scot-*"*land* in ſummer 1741, for the firſt time: and in "many places where he preached, his miniſtra-"tions were evidently bleſſed, particularly in "the cities of *Edinburgh* and *Glaſgow*, where a

(*q*) Prince's *Chriſtian Hiſtory*, N°. X.

con-

" conſiderable number of perſons were brought
" under ſuch impreſſions of religion, as have never
" yet left them; but they are ſtill following on to
" know the Lord. However, this was only the
" beginning of far greater things: for about the
" middle of *February* laſt, a very great concern
" appeared among the people of *Cambuſlang*, a ſmall
" pariſh, lying four miles ſouth-eaſt of *Glaſgow*,
" under the paſtoral inſpection of the Rev. Mr.
" *William MacCulloch*, a man of conſiderable parts
" and great piety. This concern appeared with
" ſome circumſtances very unuſual among us: to
" wit, ſevere bodily agonies, outcryings, and
" faintings in the congregation. This made the
" report of it ſpread like fire, and drew vaſt mul-
" titudes of people from all quarters to that place.
" And, I believe, in leſs than two months after
" the commencement of it, there were few pariſhes
" within twelve miles of *Cambuſlang*, but had ſome,
" more or fewer awakened there, to a very deep,
" piercing ſenſe of ſin: and many at a much
" greater diſtance. I am verily perſuaded with
" your worthy brother Mr. *Cooper*, in his preface
" to Mr. *Edwards*'s ſermon, that God has made
" uſe of theſe uncommon circumſtances, to make
" his work ſpread the faſter. But, bleſſed be
" God, *Cambuſlang* is not the only place where
" theſe impreſſions are got. The ſame work is
" ſpreading in other pariſhes, and under their own
" miniſters, particularly at *Calder*, *Kilſyth*, and
" *Cumbernaud*, all to the north, and north-eaſt of

" *Glaſgow.* And I doubt not, that ſince the mid-
" dle of *February*, when this work began at
" *Cambuſlang*, there are upwards of two thouſand
" perſons awakened, and almoſt all of them, by
" the beſt accounts I have, in a promiſing condi-
" tion: there being very few inſtances of impoſtors,
" or ſuch as have loſt their impreſſions; and many
" whom we are bound to think are true ſcripture
" converts, and evidencing it by a ſuitable walk
" and converſation. There is evidently a greater
" ſerioufneſs and concern about religion appearing
" in moſt of our congregations, than formerly: a
" a greater deſire after the word; people applying
" themſelves more cloſely to their duty; and
" erecting new ſocieties for prayer and ſpiritual
" conference: which gives us the joyful proſpect
" of a conſiderable enlargement of the Meſſiah's
" kingdom."

" My pariſh has likewiſe had ſome ſhare in this
" good work. There has been above an hundred
" new communicants among them this ſummer,
" who never did partake of the bleſſed ſacrament
" before: which is five times as many as ever I
" admitted in any former year: moſt of them
" were awakened at *Cambuſlang*; ſome of them
" in their own church; and in others the impreſ-
" ſions have been more gradual, and not attended
" with theſe uncommon circumſtances before men-
" tioned. And it is to be obſerved, that before
" we admit any perſon to the Lord's table, we
" particularly examine them, and are ſatisfied with

" their

" their knowledge of the principles of religion, of " the nature and ends of the ſacrament, and the " impreſſions of religion they have on their " minds (*qq*)."

To the ſame purpoſe is the Rev. Mr. *Williſon*'s letter to Dr. *Colman*, miniſter in *Boſton:* dated *Dundee*, *Feb.* 28, 1743. (*r*) " I muſt inform you " a little of the work of God begun here. I told " you in my laſt, that after Mr. *Whitefield*'s firſt " coming and preaching three months in *Scotland*, " there were ſome beginnings of a revival of re- " ligion in ſome of our principal cities, as *Edin-* " *burgh* and *Glaſgow*, which ſtill continue and in- " creaſe, eſpecially ſince Mr. *Whitefield*'s ſecond " coming in *June* laſt. But beſides theſe cities, " the Lord hath been pleaſed to begin a work " much like that in *New-England*, in ſeveral places " in the weſt of *Scotland*. The firſt pariſh awaken- " ed, was *Cambuſlang*; the next was the pariſh of

(*qq*) Extract of a letter from a perſon of diſtinction to the Compiler.

" *Edinburgh*, *February*, 1772. I would not aſcribe all " the revival of religion in *Scotland*, to (the inſtrumen- " tality of) Mr. *Whitefield*. At *Cambuſlang*, it began, " before he had been there; but in *Edinburgh*, and all " the other places in *Scotland*, that I heard of, after di- " ligent enquiry, it began with *his* firſt viſit. This ho- " nour he had from his divine Maſter, and it ought not " to be taken from him. And every time he came to " *Scotland*, it is an undoubted fact, that an uncommon " power attended his miniſtry: and many were always " brought under ſerious and laſting impreſſions."

(*r*) Prince's *Chriſtian Hiſtory*, N°. XI.

" *Kilſyth*, about nine miles north-eaſt of *Glaſgow*, " and afterward the pariſhes of *Calder*, *Kirkintilloch*, " *Cumbernaud*, *Campſie*, *Kilmarnock*, *Gargunnock*, " and a great many others in the country. The " awakenings of people have been, in a good " many, attended with outcryings, faintings, and " bodily diſtreſſes: but in many more, the work " has proceeded with great calmneſs. But the " effects in both ſorts are alike good and deſirable, " and hitherto we hear nothing of their falling " back from what they have profeſſed at the be- " ginning: and ſtill we hear of ſome new pariſhes " falling under great concern here and there, " though the great cryings and outward diſtreſſes " are much ceaſed.

" The Lord, in this backſliding time, is willing " to pity us, and ſee our ways and heal them, " however crooked and perverſe they have been. " O ſhall not this wonderful ſtep of divine conde- " ſcenſion, lead us all to repentance, and to go " out to meet a returning God, in the way of " humiliation and reformation. The magiſtrates " and miniſters in *Edinburgh*, are beginning to " ſet up ſocieties for reformation of manners, and " new lectures on week days. May all our cities " follow their example. There is a great increaſe " of praying ſocieties alſo in *Edinburgh* and other " towns and villages; and in them they are keep- " ing days of thankſgiving for the partial water- " ings the Lord is giving us: thoſe in *Edinburgh*,

" ſend printed memorials to others through the " nation, to excite them to it (*rr*)."

The greateſt ſtrangers to religion could not avoid hearing of theſe things, but they were very differently affected with them. Whilſt ſome became more thoughtful and ſerious, many mocked, and ſome were even filled with rage. On the other hand, the temper and behaviour of thoſe who were the ſubjects of this remarkable work, was the ſtrongeſt of all arguments that it came from above. Their earneſt deſire to be rightly directed in the way to heaven; their tender and conſcientious walk; their faithfulneſs in the duties of their ſtations; their readineſs to make ample reſtitution for any act of injuſtice they had formerly committed; their diſpoſition to judge mildly of others, but ſeverely of themſelves; their laying aſide quarrels and law-ſuits, and deſiring to be reconciled, and to live peaceably with all men; ſuch amiable and heavenly qualities, eſpecially when appearing in ſome who had formerly been of a very oppoſite character, could not fail to ſtrike every ſerious obſerver. In ſhort, it was

(*rr*) The Rev. Mr. *Macknight* of *Irvine*, thus writes to Mr. *Whitefield*, *June* 21, 1742. " Bleſſed be our glo- " rious God, there are ſome awakenings amongſt us at " *Irvine*; not only of thoſe who have been at *Cambuſlang*, " but ſeveral others are lately brought into great concern " about their eternal ſtate, and among them ſeveral chil- " dren; the news of which I know will rejoice you, " and I hope will encourage you to viſit us to help for- " ward this great and glorious work of converting ſin- " ners."——*Remarkable Particulars*, &c.

ſuch a time for the revival of religion, as had never before been ſeen in *Scotland* (*s*).

The enmity which wicked and profane men diſcovered againſt this work, and the deriſion with which they treated it, is no more than what might naturally be expected. But it is not ſo eaſy to account for the conduct of the Seceders. Theſe, not ſatisfied with forbearing to approve of it, went the length even to appoint a general faſt among them, one of the grounds of which was, the receiving Mr. *Whitefield* into *Scotland*; and another, the deluſion, as they called it, at *Cambuſlang* and other places. And Mr. *Gibb*, one of their miniſters, wrote a pamphlet inveighing againſt both, in the moſt virulent language. Such was the bigotry, and miſguided zeal of the bulk of the party at that time. It is hoped their ſucceſſors have juſter views of this matter. But it is not proper here to enlarge upon this ſubject (*t*). With reſpect to Mr. *Whitefield*, the ſpring of their firſt oppoſition to

(*s*) Particulars may be found in the atteſted narrative of the work at *Cambuſlang*; Dr. Webſter's *Divine Influence the true Spring*, &c.; and in Mr. Robe's *Narratives and Monthly Hiſtory*.—A view of the moſt memorable paſſages, is given in Vol. II. Book IV. Chap. VI. of *Hiſt. Coll. relating to the Succeſs of the Goſpel*, printed in 1754; where is alſo ſome account of the abiding fruits of theſe religious impreſſions.

(*t*) The reader who wants to ſee the objections againſt the work at *Cambuſlang*, &c. fully refuted, may conſult (beſides the books mentioned in the laſt note) Mr. *Robe*'s Letters to Mr. *Fiſher*; and Mr. *Jonathan Edwards*'s *Diſtinguiſhing Marks of a Work of the Spirit of God*."—

And

to him, ſufficiently appears from his converſation with them at *Dumfermling*, formerly mentioned. And the following letter, which he wrote at *Cambuſlang*, *Auguſt* 1742, and which was afterwards printed at *Glaſgow*, gives an account of their objections, and his anſwers, which are perfectly agreeable to the ſpirit of both *(u)*. " I heartily thank you for your " concern about unworthy me! Though I am not " very ſolicitous what the world ſay of me, yet I " would not refuſe to give any one, much leſs a " miniſter of *Jeſus Chriſt*, (and ſuch an one I take " you to be) all reaſonable ſatisfaction about any " part of my doctrine or conduct. I am ſorry that " the aſſociate preſbytery, beſides the other things " exceptionable in the grounds of their late faſt, " have done me much wrong. As to what they " ſay about the ſupremacy, my ſentiments, as to " the power and authority of the civil magiſtrate " as to ſacred things, agree with what is ſaid in " the *Weſtminſter* Confeſſion of Faith, chap. xxiii. " paragraph 3 and 4. And I do own the Lord " *Jeſus* to be the bleſſed head and king of his " church.

" The ſolemn league and covenant I never ab- " jured, neither was it ever propoſed to me to be

And as to the argument from the goodneſs of the fruits, which is level to the capacities of all, the Compiler thinks it his duty to add, that among his acquaintance, who were the ſubjects of that work, the fruits were generally both *good* and *laſting*.

(*u*) Glaſgow *Weekly Hiſt.* N°. XXIII.

" abjured: and as for my miſſives, if the aſſociate " preſbytery will be pleaſed to print them, the " world will ſee that they had no reaſon to expect " I would act in any other manner than I have " done. What that part of my experience is, that " ſavours of the groſſeſt enthuſiaſm, I know not, " becauſe not ſpecified; but this one thing I know, " when I converſed with them, they were ſatisfied " with the account I then gave of my experiences, " and alſo of the validity of my miſſion; only, " when they found I would preach the goſpel pro- " miſcuouſly to all, and for every miniſter that " would invite me, and not adhere only to them, " one of them particularly ſaid, 'They were ſa- " tisfied with all the other accounts which I gave " of myſelf, except of my call to *Scotland* at that " time.' They would have been glad of my help, " and have received me as a miniſter of *Jeſus* " *Chriſt*, had I conſented to have preached only at " the invitation of them and their people. But I " judged that to be contrary to the dictates of my " conſcience; and therefore I could not comply. " I thought their foundation was too narrow for " any high houſe to be built upon. I declared " freely, when laſt in *Scotland*, (and am more and " more convinced of it ſince) that they were " building a *Babel* (*x*). At the ſame time, they knew

(*x*) The event verified this conjecture. In his M. S. notes, ſeveral years after, he makes the following remark: " Such a work (the religious concern at *Cam-* " *buſlang*)

" knew very well, I was very far from being
" againſt all church-government, (for how can
" any church ſubſiſt without it?) I only urged, as
" I do now, that ſince holy men differ ſo much
" about the outward form, we ſhould bear with,
" and forbear one another, though in this reſpect
" we are not of one mind. I have often declared
" in the moſt public manner, that I believe the
" Church of *Scotland* to be the beſt conſtituted
" national church in the world. At the ſame time
" I would bear with, and converſe freely with all
" others, who do not err in fundamentals, and
" who give evidence that they are true lovers of
" the Lord *Jeſus*. This is what I mean by a ca-
" tholic ſpirit. Not that I believe a Jew or Pagan
" continuing ſuch, can be a true chriſtian, or have

" *buſlang*) ſo very extenſive, muſt meet with great op-
" poſition. My collections for the orphans gave a great
" handle; but the chief oppoſition was made by the Se-
" ceders, who, though they had prayed for me at a moſt
" extravagant rate, now gave out that I was agitated by
" the devil. Taking it for granted, that all converted
" perſons muſt take the covenant, and that God had
" left the *Scotch* eſtabliſhed churches long ago, and that
" he would never work by the hands of a curate of the
" Church of *England*, they condemned the whole work,
" as the work of the devil; and kept a faſt through all
" *Scotland*, to humble themſelves, becauſe the devil
" was come down in great wrath, and to pray that the
" Lord would rebuke the deſtroyer (for that was my
" title). But the Lord rebuked theſe good men; for
" they ſplit among themſelves, and excommunicated
" one another. Having afterwards a ſhort interview
" with Mr. *Ralph Erſkine*, we embraced each other, and
" he ſaid, 'We had ſeen ſtrange things."

" true

" true chriſtianity in them; and if there be any " thing tending that way in the late extract which " I ſent you, I utterly diſavow it. And I am " ſure, I obſerved no ſuch thing in it, when I " publiſhed it, though upon a cloſer review, ſome " expreſſions ſeem juſtly exceptionable. You know " how ſtrongly I aſſert all the doctrines of grace " as held forth in the *Weſtminſter* Confeſſion of " Faith, and doctrinal articles of the Church of " *England*. Theſe I truſt I ſhall adhere to as long " as I live, becauſe I verily believe they are the " truths of God, and have felt the power of them " in my own heart. I am only concerned that " good men ſhould be guilty of ſuch miſrepre- " ſentations. But this teaches me more and more " to exerciſe compaſſion toward all the children of " God, and to be more jealous over our own " hearts, knowing what fallible creatures we all " are. I acknowledge that I am a poor blind ſin- " ner, liable to err, and would be obliged to an " enemy, much more to ſo dear a friend as you " are, to point out to me my miſtakes, as to my " practice, or unguarded expreſſions in my preach- " ing or writing. At the ſame time, I would " humble myſelf before my Maſter, for any thing " I may ſay or do amiſs, and beg the influence " and aſſiſtances of his bleſſed Spirit, that I may " ſay and do ſo no more."

So much for Mr. *Whitefield*'s difference with the Seceders. But notwithſtanding all this, upon his ſecond arrival in *Scotland*, *June* 1742, he was re-

ceived

ceived by great numbers, among whom were ſome perſons of diſtinction, with much joy: and had the ſatisfaction of ſeeing and hearing more and more of the happy fruits of his miniſtry *(y)*. At *Edinburgh* he preached twice a day, as uſual, in the Hoſpital park, where a number of ſeats and ſhades, in the form of an amphitheatre, were erected for the accommodation of his hearers. And in conſequence of earneſt invitations, he went to the weſt country, particularly to *Cambuſlang*, where he preached no leſs than three times upon the very day of his arrival, to a vaſt body of people, although he had preached that ſame morning at *Glaſgow*. The laſt of theſe exerciſes he began at nine at night, continuing till eleven, when he ſaid he obſerved ſuch a commotion among the people, as he had never ſeen in *America*. Mr. *MacCulloch* preached after him, till paſt one in the morning, and even then could hardly perſuade the people to depart. All night in the fields might be heard

(*y*) "*Edinburgh, June* 4, 1742. This morning I received glorious accounts of the carrying on of the Mediator's kingdom. Three of the little boys that were converted when I was laſt here, came to me and wept, and begged me to pray for and with them. A miniſter tells me, that ſcarce one is fallen back, who was awakened, either among old or young. The Serjeant, whoſe letter brother *C*—— has, goes on well with his company." Letter CCCCXXII.

And in the M. S. "Societies (or fellowſhip meetings) I found ſet up for prayer, eſpecially at *Glaſgow* and *Edinburgh*. Several young gentlemen dedicated themſelves to the miniſtry, and became burning and ſhining lights."

the voice of prayer and praiſe. As Mr. *Whitefield* was frequently at *Cambuſlang* during this ſeaſon, a deſcription of what he obſerved there at different times, will be beſt given in his own words (z); "Perſons from all parts flocked to ſee, and many "from many parts, went home convinced, and "converted unto God. A brae, or hill, near the "manſe at *Cambuſlang*, ſeemed to be formed by "Providence, for containing a large congregation. "People ſat unwearied till two in the morning, "to hear ſermons, diſregarding the weather. You "could ſcarce walk a yard, but you muſt tread "upon ſome, either rejoicing in God for mercies "received, or crying out for more. Thouſands "and thouſands have I ſeen, before it was poſſible "to catch it by ſympathy, melted down under "the word and power of God. At the celebra- "tion of the holy communion, their joy was ſo "great, that at the deſire of many, both miniſters "and people, in imitation of *Hezekiah*'s paſſover, "they had, a month or two afterwards, a ſecond; "which was a general rendezvous of the people "of God. The communion-table was in the "field; three tents, at proper diſtances, all ſur- "rounded with a multitude of hearers; above "twenty miniſters (among whom was good old "Mr. *Bonner*) attending to preach and aſſiſt, all "enlivening and enlivened by one another."

Beſides his labours at *Glaſgow* and *Cambuſlang*, it is ſomewhat ſurprizing to think, how many other

(z) *M. S.*

places

places in the weſt of *Scotland* he viſited within the compaſs of a few weeks, preaching once or twice at every one of them, and at ſeveral three or four times. It is worth while to ſet down the Journal (*a*) of a week or two. In the beginning of *July*, he preached twice on *Monday* at *Paiſley*; on the *Tueſday* and *Wedneſday*, three times each day at *Irvine*; on *Thurſday*, twice at *Mearns*; on *Friday*, three times at *Cumbernaud*; and on *Saturday*, twice at *Falkirk*. And again in the latter end of *Auguſt* (*b*), on *Thurſday*, he preached twice at *Greenock*; on *Friday*, three times at *Kilbride*; on *Saturday*, once at *Kilbride*, and twice at *Stevenſon*; on *Sabbath*, four times at *Irvine*; on *Monday*, once at *Irvine*, and three times at (*c*) *Kilmarnock*;

(*a*) Letter CCCCXXVI.

(*b*) Letter CCCCXLIX.

(*c*) A gentleman now living, of an irreproachable character, thus writes to the Compiler, *April* 8, 1771. "When Mr. *Whitefield* was preaching at *Kilmarnock*, on "the 23d of *Auguſt*, 1742, from theſe words, '*And* "*out of his fulneſs have all we received, and grace for* "*grace*,' I thought I never heard ſuch a ſermon on the "fulneſs of grace that is treaſured up in *Chriſt Jeſus*: "and can truly ſay, that I felt the efficacy of the Holy "Spirit upon my ſoul, during that diſcourſe. I afterwards "ſhut up myſelf in my chamber, during the remain- "ing part of that day; and before I laid myſelf down to "reſt, I made a ſolemn and ſerious dedication of myſelf "to God, by way of covenant, extended and ſubſcribed "the ſame with my hands, and, I think, had commu- "nion with God in ſo doing; to which I have often "had recourſe ſince, in adhering thereto, and in renew- "ing thereof; though my life ſince has been attended "with many backſlidings from God, and have been per-

"fidious

marnock; (*d*) on *Tuesday*, once at *Kilmarnock*, and four times at *Stewarton*; on *Wednesday*, once at *Stewarton*, and twice at the *Mearns*. He was also at *Inchannen*, *New-Kilpatrick*, *Calder*, and *Kilsyth*, (where the religious concern still increased) and at *Torphichen*. He was indeed sometimes taken very ill, and his friends thought he was going off: "But in the pulpit (says he) the Lord out of "weakness, makes me to wax strong, and causes "me to triumph more and more (*e*)." And even when he retired for a day or two, it was on purpose

"fidious in his covenant; yet I still rejoice in his salva-"tion through precious *Christ*. And it is refreshing to "behold the place at this very day, as I have often done "since. I from the æra abovementioned, always "looked upon Mr. *Whitefield* as my spiritual father, and "frequently heard him afterwards in *Edinburgh* and "*Glasgow* with much satisfaction. It always gave me "joy, the mentioning of his name, and grieved me "when he was reproached. And I can very well re-"member, that when *Cape Breton* was taken, I hap-"pened to be then at *Edinburgh*; and being invited to "breakfast with Mr. *Whitefield*, I never in all my life "enjoyed such another breakfast. He gave the company "a fine and lively descant upon that part of the world, "made us all join in a hymn of praise and thanksgiving, "and concluded with a most devout and fervent prayer. "In the evening of that day, he preached a most excel-"lent thanksgiving sermon, from the first two verses of "the cxxvith psalm."

(*d*) "I never preached with so much apparent success "before. At *Greenock*, *Irvine*, *Kilbride*, *Kilmarnock*, and "*Stewarton*, the concern was great: at the three last "very extraordinary." Letter CCCCXLIX.

(*e*) Letter CCCCXXXV.

to

to write letters, and to prepare pieces for the preſs, ſo that he was as buſy as ever *(f)*.

When he was at *Edinburgh*, he received accounts that the *Spaniards* had landed in *Georgia*. Upon this occaſion he wrote to Mr. *Haberſham (g)*, " I " am glad my dear family is removed to Mr. " *Bryan*'s, and rejoice that our glorious God had " raiſed him and his brother up, to be ſuch friends " in time of need. My thoughts have been va- " riouſly exerciſed, but my heart kept ſtedfaſt and " joyful in the Lord of all lords, whoſe mercy " endureth for ever. I long to be with you, and " methinks could willingly be found at the head " of you kneeling and praying, though a *Spaniard*'s " ſword ſhould be put to my throat. But alas, I " know not how I ſhould behave, if put to the " trial: only we have a promiſe, that as our day " is, ſo our ſtrength ſhall be. The thoughts of " divine love carry me above every thing. My

(f) Particularly, *A Vindication of the Work of God in* New-England. See Works, Vol. IV. and ſeveral Letters about the affairs of the Orphan-houſe, ſome of his friends there having met with harſh treatment from the magiſtrates of *Savannah*. See Letter CCCCXXXIX, to Mr. *B*——, and Letter CCCCXL, to the Truſtees for *Georgia*, and Letters CCCCXLII, CCCCXLIII, to General *Oglethorpe*, and to *Thomas J*——, Eſq; in *Georgia*.

At this time alſo he publiſhed at *Edinburgh*, a continuation of the account of the Orphan-houſe, from *January* 1741, to *June* 1742.——See his Works, Vol. III. where you have the whole account continued from time to time, till *April* 1770.

(g) Letter CCCCLVII.

" dear

" dear friend, the *Spaniards* cannot rob us of this; " nor can men or devils.—I humbly hope that I " ſhall ſhortly hear of the ſpiritual and temporal " welfare of you all." And he was not diſap- " pointed; for a few weeks after he was informed " of his family's ſafe return to *Betheſda (b)*.

About the end of *October* he left *Scotland*, and rode poſt to *London*, where he arrived in about five days.

(*b*) The manner in which the *Spaniards* were repulſed, with remarks upon the kindneſs of Providence to the colony, may be ſeen in an extract of General *Oglethorpe's* proclamation for a thankſgiving, in Letter DII.

CHAP.

CHAP. XI.

From his Arrival in London *in the Year* 1742, *to his embarking for* America, 1744.

ON Mr. *Whitefield*'s arrival in *London*, he found a new awakening at the Tabernacle, which they had been obliged to enlarge; where, as he obſerves, "from morning till midnight *(i)*, I am "employed, and, glory be to rich grace, I am "carried through the duties of each day with "chearfulneſs, and almoſt uninterrupted tran-"quillity. Our ſociety is large, but in good order. "My Maſter gives us much of his gracious pre-"ſence, both in our public and private admini-"ſtrations."

In the month of *March* 1743, he went into *Glouceſterſhire*, where the people ſeemed more deſirous to hear than ever. "Preaching (ſays he) "*(k)* in *Glouceſterſhire*, is now like preaching at "the Tabernacle in *London*." And again, (in a Letter, dated *April* 7,) *(l)* "I preached and took "leave of the *Glouceſter* people, with mutual

(*i*) Letter CCCCXCI.

(*k*) Letter DIV.

(*l*) Letter DVI.

" and great concern, on *Sunday* evening laſt. It " was paſt one in the morning before I could lay " my weary body down. At five I roſe again, " ſick for want of reſt; but I was enabled to get " on horſeback, and ride to Mr. *F*——'s, where " I preached to a large congregation, who came " there at ſeven in the morning. At ten, I read " prayers and preached, and afterward admin- " iſtered the ſacrament in *Stonehouſe* church. Then " I rode to *Stroud*, and preached to about 12,000 " in Miſtreſs *G*——'s field; and about ſix in the " evening to a like number in *Hampton-Common*. " After this, went to *Hampton*, and held a general " love-feaſt with the united ſocieties, and went to " bed about midnight very chearful, and very " happy." Next morning he preached near *Durſley* to ſome thouſands; about ſeven reached *Briſtol*, and preached to a full congregation at *Smiths-Hall*; and on *Tueſday* morning, after preaching again, ſet out for *Waterford*, in *South-Wales*, where he opened the aſſociation which he and his brethren had agreed upon, and was ſeveral days with them, ſettling the affairs of the ſocieties. He continued in *Wales* ſome weeks, and preached with great apparent ſucceſs at *Cardiff*, *Lantriſſant*, *Neath*, *Swanzey*, *Harbrook*, *Llanelthy*, *Carmarthen*, *(m) Larn*, *Narbatt*, *Newton*, *Jefferſon*, *Llaſſvran*,

(*m*) " It was the great ſeſſions. The Juſtices deſired " I would ſtay till they roſe, and they would come. " Accordingly they did, and many thouſands more; and " ſeveral people of quality." Letter CCCCCIX.

Kidwilly, *Llangathan*, *Landovery*, *Brecon*, *Trevecka*, *Guenfethen*, *Builth*, and the *Gore* (*n*), and in the latter end of *April* returned to *Glouceſter*, after having, in about three weeks (*o*), travelled about four hundred *Engliſh* miles, ſpent three days in attending aſſociations (*p*), and preached about forty times.

(*n*) " The work begun by Mr. *Jones*, ſpread itſelf far " and near, in *South* and *North-Wales*, where the Lord " had made Mr. *Howel Harris* an inſtrument of con- " verting ſeveral clergy as well as laymen. Laſt year " I viſited ſeveral places, but now I went to more, and " in every place found, that not one half had been told " me. The power of God at the ſacrament, under the " miniſtry of Mr. *Rowland*, was enough to make a per- " ſon's heart burn within him. At ſeven of the morn- " ing have I ſeen perhaps ten thouſand from different " parts, in the midſt of ſermon, crying, Gogunniant— " bendyitti—ready to leap for joy. Aſſociations were " now formed, and monthly or quarterly meetings ap- " pointed, and a cloſer connection eſtabliſhed between " the *Engliſh* and *Welch*, ſo that ſeveral came over to " aſſiſt." *M. S.*

(*o*) Letter DXIV.

(*p*) At one of theſe aſſociations, a motion was made to ſeparate from the eſtabliſhed Church: but (ſays Mr. *Whitefield*, Letter DXXXIII.) " by far the greater " part ſtrenuouſly oppoſed it, and with good reaſon: " for, as we enjoy ſuch great liberty under the mild and " gentle government of his preſent Majeſty King *George*, " I think we can do him, our country, and the cauſe of " God, more ſervice in ranging up and down, preaching " repentance towards God, and faith in our Lord *Jeſus* " *Chriſt*, to thoſe multitudes who would neither come " into church or meeting, but who are led by curioſity " to follow us into the fields.——This is a way to " which God has affixed his ſeal for many years paſt."

In *May* he went back to *London*, "Once more, "as he expreſſes it, to attack the prince of dark- "neſs in *Moorfields*," in the time of the holidays. The congregations were amazingly great, and much affected. And by the contributions which were now and formerly made for his orphans, he had the ſatisfaction of paying all that was due in *England*, and of making a ſmall remittance to Mr. *Haberſham* (*q*).

About the middle of *June* he made another excurſion, and preached at *Fairford*, *Glanfield*, *Burford*, *Bengeworth*, and *Glouceſter*; alſo at *Briſtol* and *Kingſwood*, and at *Brinkworth*, *Tetherton*, and *Hampton*. At *Briſtol* he continued ſome time, preaching ſtatedly every day twice, and four times on the *Sunday*. Afterwards he preached at *Exeter* to very large congregations, where many of the clergy attended.

In *Auguſt* he returned to *London*, but made no long ſtay there. "I thank you, ſays he to a cor- "reſpondent (*r*), for your kind caution to ſpare "myſelf; but evangelizing is certainly my pro- "vince. Every where effectual doors are opened. "So far from thinking of neſtling at *London*, I "am more and more convinced that I ſhould go "from place to place."

Accordingly we find him in the months of *October*, *November*, and *December*, preaching and tra-

(*q*) Letter DXIX.

(*r*) Letter DXL.

velling

velling through the country, as if it had been the middle of Summer. At *Avon* in *Wilts*, *Tetherton*, *Clack*, *Brinkworth*, *Chippenham*, *Wellington*, *Cullompton*, *Exeter*, *Axminſter*, *Ottery*, *Biddeford* (*s*), *St. Gennis* in *Cornwall* (*t*), *Birmingham* (*u*), *Kidderminſter* (*x*), and *Bromſgrove*. Nor did he feel his health much impaired, though it was ſo late in the ſeaſon. He obſerves, indeed, (Letter DXLII.) that he had got a cold; but adds, "The Lord "warms my heart."

(*s*) "Here is a clergyman about eighty years of age, "but not above one year old in the ſchool of *Chriſt*. He "lately preached three times, and rode forty miles the "ſame day. A young *Oxonian* who came with him, "and many others, were deeply affected. I cannot well "deſcribe with what power the word was attended. "Dear Mr. *Hervey*, one of our firſt Methodiſts at *Ox*-"*ford*, and who was lately a curate here, had laid the "fundation." Letter DXL.

(*t*) "Many prayers were put up by the worthy "Rector and others, for an outpouring of God's bleſſed "Spirit. They were anſwered. Arrows of conviction "flew ſo thick, and ſo faſt, and ſuch an univerſal weep-"ing prevailed from one end of the congregation to the "other, that good Mr. *J*—— their miniſter, could not "help going from ſeat to ſeat to ſpeak, encourage, and "comfort the wounded ſouls." Letter DXLI.

(*u*) "It is near eleven at night, and nature calls for "reſt. I have preached five times this day, and, weak "as I am, through *Chriſt* ſtrengthening me, I could "preach five times more." Letter DXLIII.

(*x*) "I was kindly received by Mr. *Williams*. Many "friends were at his houſe. I was greatly refreſhed to "find what a ſweet ſavour of good Mr. *Baxter*'s doctrine, "works, and diſcipline remained to this day." Letter DXLIV.

February 1744, an event happened to him, which, amidſt all his ſucceſs, tended to keep him humble, and ſerved to cure him of a weakneſs to which he had been liable, the truſting to groundleſs impreſſions. It was the death of his only child, concerning whom he was ſo impreſſed, that he made no ſcruple of declaring before the birth, that the child would be a ſon, and that he hoped he would live to preach the goſpel. Several narrow eſcapes which Mrs. *Whitefield* had during her pregnancy, confirmed him in his expectations; which were ſo high, that after he had publicly baptized the child at the Tabernacle, all went away big with hopes of his being ſpared to be employed in the work of God. But theſe fond expectations were ſoon blaſted by the child's death, when he was about four months old. This was, no doubt, very humbling to the father; but he was helped to make the wiſeſt and beſt improvement of it. "Though I am diſappointed (ſays "he, writing to his friend *(y)*, of a living preacher "by the death of my ſon; yet I hope what hap- "pened before his birth, and ſince at his death, "has taught me ſuch leſſons, as if duly improved, "may render his miſtaken parent more cautious, "more ſober-minded, more experienced in Satan's "devices, and conſequently more uſeful in his fu- "ture labours to the church of God."

March 3, he attended the aſſizes at *Glouceſter*. The occaſion was, in the Summer 1743, the Me-

(y) Letter DXLVII.

thodiſts

thodists had been persecuted and abused by the mob, particularly at *Hampton*, where several were hurt, and the life of their preachers threatened. Mr. *Whitefield* having tried other methods in vain, resolved, with the advice and assistance of his brethren, to seek the protection of law: and accordingly got an information lodged against the *Hampton* rioters in the court of King's-Bench. Facts being proved by a variety of evidence, and the defendants making no reply, the rule was made absolute; and an information filed against them. To this they pleaded *Not guilty*, and therefore the cause was referred in course to the assizes in *Gloucester*. There he attended, and got the better of his adversaries. After a full hearing on both sides, a verdict was given for the prosecutors, and all the defendants were brought in *guilty* of the whole information lodged against them. This prosecution had a very good effect. The rioters were greatly alarmed at the thoughts of having an execution issued out against them. But the intention of the Methodists was, to let them see what they could do, and then to forgive them (z).

Some time before this, several anonymous papers, entitled, "Observations upon the Conduct and Behaviour of a certain Sect, usually distinguished by the name of Methodists," had been printed, and handed about in the religious societies

(z) Letter DXLIX, DL.——See an account of this trial in his Works, Vol. IV.

of *London* and *Weſtminſter*, and given to many private perſons, with ſtrict injunctions to part with them to no one. Mr. *Whitefield* having accidentally had the haſty peruſal of them; and finding many queries concerning him and his conduct contained in them; and having applied for a copy, which was refuſed him, he thought it his duty to publiſh an advertiſement, deſiring (as he knew not how ſoon he might embark for *Georgia*) a ſpeedy, open publication of the ſaid papers, that he might make a candid and impartial anſwer. He had reaſon to believe the Biſhop of *London* was concerned in compoſing or reviſing them: but that he might not be miſtaken, after the publication of the advertiſement, he wrote the Biſhop a letter, wherein he deſired to know, whether his Lordſhip was the author or not; and alſo deſired a copy. The Biſhop ſent word, "He ſhould hear from him." Some time after, one Mr. *Owen*, printer to the Biſhop, left a letter for Mr. *Whitefield*, informing him that he had orders from *ſeveral of the Biſhops*, to print the *Obſervations*, &c. *with ſome few additions*, for their uſe; and when the impreſſion was finiſhed, Mr. *Whitefield* ſhould have a copy.—For theſe reaſons, Mr. *Whitefield* thought it proper to direct his *Anſwer to the Obſervations*, to the Biſhop of *London*, and the other Biſhops concerned in the publication of them. This Anſwer occaſioned the Rev. Mr. *Church*'s Expoſtulatory Letter to Mr.

Whitefield;

Whitefield; to which he ſoon replied, with thanks to the author for prefixing his name (*zz*).

Having reſolved to make another viſit to *America*, whither Mr. *Smith*, a merchant, then in *England*, in the name of thouſands invited him. With him he took paſſage in a ſhip going from *Portſmouth*; but being informed, juſt before he was about to take his farewell, that the captain refuſed to take him, for fear, as he alledged, of ſpoiling the ſailors, he was obliged to go as far as *Plymouth*. "In my way, ſays he, I preached at *Wellington*, "where one Mr. *Darracott* had been a bleſſed in- "ſtrument of doing much good. At *Exeter* alſo, "I reviſited, where many ſouls were awakened to "the divine life. At *Biddeford*, where good Mr. "*Hervey* had been curate, we had much of the "power of God; and alſo at *Kingſbridge*. But "the chief ſcene was at *Plymouth* and the dock, "where I expected leaſt ſucceſs (*a*)." It is re-

(*zz*) See his Works, Vol. IV. where is alſo his Anſwer to the Second Part of the Obſervations, &c. in a ſecond letter to the Biſhops, written during his voyage to *America* that year.

(*a*) *M. S.* Upon mentioning *Biddeford*, he adds here a character of Mr. *Hervey*; it is pity he did not write it down.—However, we have a ſketch of it in Letter DCCLXIII. "Your ſentiments concerning "Mr. *H*——'s book, are very juſt. The author of it "is my old friend; a moſt heavenly-minded creature, "one of the firſt of the Methodiſts, who is contented "with a ſmall cure, and gives all that he has to the "poor. He is very weak, and daily waits for his diſſo- "lution."

markable, that juſt before his ſucceſs at *Plymouth*, he was in danger of being killed. Four gentlemen, it ſeems, came to the houſe of one of his particular friends, kindly enquiring after him, and deſiring to know where he lodged. Soon afterwards, Mr. *Whitefield* received a letter, informing him, that the writer was a nephew of Mr. *S*——, an attorney at *New-York*; that he had the pleaſure of ſupping with Mr. *Whitefield* at his uncle's houſe; and deſired his company to ſup with him, and a few more friends, at a tavern. Mr. *Whitefield* ſent him word, that it was not cuſtomary for him to ſup abroad at taverns, but ſhould be glad of the gentleman's company to eat a morſel with him at his lodging; he accordingly came and ſupped; but was obſerved frequently to look around him, and to be very abſent. At laſt he took his leave, and returned to his companions in the tavern; and being by them interrogated, what he had done, he anſwered, "That he had been uſed ſo civilly, he "had not the heart to touch him." Upon which, it ſeems, another of the company, a lieutenant of a man of war, laid a wager of ten guineas, that he would do his buſineſs for him. His companions, however, had the precaution to take away his ſword. It was now about midnight, and Mr. *Whitefield* having that day preached to a large congregation, and viſited the *French* priſoners, was gone to bed: when the landlady came and told him that a well-dreſſed gentleman deſired to ſpeak with him, Mr. *Whitefield*, imagining it was ſomebody under con-

conviction, desired him to be brought up. He came, and sat down by the bed side, congratulated him upon the success of his ministry, and expressed much concern at being detained from hearing him. Soon after he broke out into the most abusive language, and in a cruel and cowardly manner, beat him in his bed. The landlady and her daughter hearing the noise, rushed into the room, and seized upon him; but he soon disengaged himself from them, and repeated his blows on Mr. *Whitefield*, who being apprehensive that he intended to shoot or stab him, underwent all the surprize of a sudden and violent death. Afterwards, a second came into the house, and cried out from the bottom of the stairs, "Take cou-"rage, I am ready to help you." But by the repeated cry of *murder*, the alarm was now so great, that they both made off. "The next "morning, says Mr. *Whitefield* (*b*), I was to ex-"pound at a private house, and then to set out "for *Biddeford*. Some urged me to stay and "prosecute; but being better employed, I went "on my intended journey, was greatly blessed "in preaching the everlasting gospel, and upon "my return was well paid for what I had suffered: "curiosity having led perhaps two thousand more "than ordinary, to see and hear a man that had "like to have been murdered in his bed. And "I trust in the five weeks time (*c*), while I waited

(*b*) Letter DLII.

(*c*) *M. S.*

"for

" for the convoy, hundreds were awakened and " turned unto the Lord. At the dock alſo, " near *Plymouth*, a glorious work was begun. " Could the fields between *Plymouth* and the Dock, " ſpeak, they could tell what bleſſed ſeaſons were " enjoyed there."

CHAP.

CHAP. XII.

From his embarking for America *in* 1744, *to his going to the* Bermudas, *in the Year* 1748.

AS ſoon as the convoy came (*d*), Mr. *Whitefield* embarked in the beginning of *Auguſt* 1744, though in a poor ſtate of health. The tedioufneſs of the voyage, he imagined, occaſioned no ſmall addition to a violent pain in his ſide. However, he ſays, "Bleſſed be God, in a week "or two after we ſailed, we began to have a "church in our ſhip. We had regular public "prayer morning and evening, frequent com-"munion, and days of humiliation and faſting." After a paſſage of eleven weeks (*e*), he arrived at

(*d*) "*Auguſt* 4. Our convoy is now come. I deſire "you all to bleſs GOD for what he is doing in theſe "parts; for preaching in the Dock is now like preach-"ing at the Tabernacle. Our morning lectures are "very delightful. O! the thouſands that flock to the "preaching of *Chriſt*'s Goſpel."——Letter DLVIII, DLIX.

P. S. "I muſt tell you one thing more. There is a "ferry over to *Plymouth*. The ferrymen are now ſo "much my friends, that they will take nothing of the "multitudes that come to hear me preach; ſaying, 'GOD forbid that we ſhould ſell the word of GOD.'

(*e*) His Letter to the Clergy of the Dioceſs of *Litchfield* and *Coventry*, is dated during this voyage.

York

York in *New England*. Colonel *Pepperell* went with ſome friends in his own boat, to invite him to his houſe. But he was not in a proper condition to accept the invitation, being ſo ill of a nervous cholic, that he was obliged, immediately after his arrival, to go to bed. His friends were very apprehenſive; but he himſelf had much inward peace. Great care was taken of him by a phyſician who had been a notorious Deiſt, but was awakened, the laſt time he was in *New England*. For ſome time he was, indeed, very weak: "Yet (he writes) *(f)* in three weeks, I was en- "abled to preach: but, imprudently going over "the ferry to *Portſmouth*, I caught cold, imme- "diately relapſed, and was taken, as every one "thought, with death, in my dear friend Mr. "*Sherburne*'s houſe. What gave me moſt con- "cern was, that notice had been given of my "being to preach. Whilſt the Doctor was pre- "paring a medicine, feeling my pains abated, I "on a ſudden cried, 'Doctor, my pains are ſuſ- 'pended: by the help of God, I will go and 'preach, and then come home and die.' "In my "own apprehenſion, and in all appearance to "others, I was a dying man. I preached. The "people heard me as ſuch. The inviſible reali- "ties of another world lay open to my view. "Expecting to ſtretch into eternity, and to be "with my maſter before the morning, I ſpoke

(f) M. S. and Letter DLXII. See Works, Vol. IV.

"with

" with peculiar energy. Such effects followed the " word, I thought it was worth dying for a thou- " ſand times. Though wonderfully comforted " within, at my return home, I thought I was " dying indeed. I was laid on a bed upon the " ground, near the fire, and I heard my friends " ſay, ' He is gone.' But God was pleaſed to " order it otherwiſe. I gradually recovered; and " ſoon after, a poor negro-woman would ſee me. " She came, ſat down upon the ground, and " looked earneſtly in my face, and then ſaid, in " broken language; ' Maſter, you juſt go to ' Heaven's gate. But *Jeſus Chriſt* ſaid, Get you ' down, get you down, you muſt not come here ' yet; but go firſt, and call ſome more poor ne- ' groes.' " I prayed to the Lord, that if I was " to live, this might be the event.

" In about three weeks I was enabled, though " in great weakneſs, to reach *Boſton*; and every day " was more and more confirmed, in what I had " heard about a glorious work, that had been " begun and carried on there, and in almoſt all " parts of *New England*, for two years together. " Before my laſt embarkation from *Georgia*, Mr. " *Colman*, and Mr. *Cooper*, wrote me word, that " upon Mr. *Tenant*'s going out as an itinerant, the " awakening greatly increaſed in various places (*g*),

(*g*) See *Prince*'s Chriſtian Hiſtory, (or Hiſtorical Collections, &c. Vol. II. page 304) where are atteſtations of above a hundred-and-twenty miniſters to the goodneſs of the work.

" till

" till, at length, the work ſo advanced every " where, that many thought the latter-day glory " was indeed come, and that a nation was to be " born in a day. But, as the ſame ſun that en- " lightens and warms the earth, gives vent to " noxious inſects; ſo the ſame work, that for a " while carried all before it, was ſadly blemiſhed " through the ſubtility of *Satan (h)*, and the " want of more experience in miniſters and " people, who had never ſeen ſuch a ſcene be- " fore. Oppoſers, who waited for ſuch an occa- " ſion, did all they could to aggravate every " thing. One rode ſeveral hundred miles, to " pick up all the accounts he could get of what " was wrong; in what he called only, 'a reli- ' gious ſtir.' " And God having been pleaſed " to ſend me firſt, all was laid upon me. Teſti- " monies ſigned by various miniſters came out " againſt me (*i*), almoſt every day. And the diſ- " orders were alſo at the higheſt; ſo that for a " while, my ſituation was rendered uncomfort- " able (*k*). But amidſt all this ſmoke, a bleſſed " fire

(*h*) Thus it was at the Reformation in *Germany*.

(*i*) He wrote an Anſwer, to a Teſtimony by *Harvard* College. See Works, Vol. IV.

(*k*) While ſome publiſhed teſtimonials againſt Mr. *Whitefield*, others publiſhed teſtimonials in his favour: as Mr. *Hobby*, Mr. *Loring*; Fifteen miniſters convened at *Taunton*, *March* 5, 1745. And the following paragraph is in *Prince*'s Chriſtian Hiſtory, No. XCIV.

" *Saturday*, *November* 24, 1744. The Rev. Mr. *White-* " *field* was ſo far revived, as to be able to ſet out from " *Portſmouth*

" fire broke out. The awakened ſouls were as " eager as ever to hear the word (*k*). Having " heard

" *Portſmouth* to *Boſton*, whither he came in a very feeble " ſtate the *Monday* evening after: ſince which, he has " been able to preach in ſeveral of our largeſt houſes of " public worſhip, particularly the Rev. Dr. *Colman*'s, " Dr. *Sewall*'s, Mr. *Webb*'s, and Mr. *Gee*'s, to crowded " aſſemblies of people, and with great and growing ac- " ceptance. At Dr. *Colman*'s deſire, and the conſent of " the church, on the Lord's-day after his arrival, he " adminiſtered to them the Holy Communion. And laſt " Lord's-day he preached for Mr. *Cheever* of *Chelſea*, " and adminiſtered the Holy Supper there. The next " day preached for the Rev. Mr. *Emerſon* of *Malden*. " Yeſterday he ſet out to preach at ſome towns to the " northward, propoſes to return hither the next *Wedneſ-* " *day* evening, and after a few days, to comply with the " earneſt invitations of ſeveral miniſters, to go and " preach to their congregations in the ſouthern parts of " the province. He comes with the ſame extraordi- " nary ſpirit of meekneſs, ſweetneſs, and univerſal be- " nevolence, as before. In oppoſition to the ſpirit of " ſeparation and bigotry, is ſtill for holding communion " with all proteſtant churches. In oppoſition to enthu- " ſiaſm, he preaches a cloſe adherence to the Scrip- " tures, the neceſſity of trying all impreſſions by them, " and of rejecting whatever is not agreeable to them, " as deluſions. In oppoſition to *Antinomianiſm*, he " preaches up all kinds of relative and religious duties, " though to be performed in the ſtrength of *Chriſt*: " and in ſhort, the doctrines of the Church of *Eng-* " *land*, and of the firſt fathers of this country. As " before, he firſt applies himſelf to the underſtandings " of his hearers, and then to the affections. And the " more he preaches, the more he convinces people of " their miſtakes about him, and increaſes their ſatiſ- " faction."

(*k*) " A man of good parts, ready wit, and lively " imagination, who had made it his buſineſs, in order

" heard that I had expounded early in *Scotland*, " they begged I would do the ſame in *Boſton*. I " complied, and opened a lecture at ſix in the " morning. I ſeldom preached to leſs than two " thouſand. It was delightful to ſee ſo many of " both ſexes, neatly dreſſed, flocking to hear the " word, and returning home to family-prayer and " breakfaſt, before the oppoſers were out of their " beds. So that it was commonly ſaid, That " between early riſing, and tar-water, the phyſi- " cians would have no buſineſs."

It was now Spring 1745, and at that time the firſt expedition was ſet on foot againſt *Cape Breton*. Colonel *Pepperell*, who was then at *Boſton*, and conſtantly attended Mr. *Whitefield*'s lecture, was pleaſed, the day before he accepted a commiſſion, to be General in that expedition, to aſk Mr. *Whitefield*'s opinion of the matter. He told him, with his uſual frankneſs, " That he did not, in- " deed, think the ſcheme propoſed for taking " *Louiſburgh*, very promiſing: that the eyes of all " would be upon him. If he did not ſucceed, " the widows and orphans, of the ſlain ſoldiers,

" to furniſh matter for preaching over a bottle, to come " and hear, and then carry away ſcraps of my ſer- " mons; having one night got ſufficient matter to work " upon, as he thought, attempted to go out; but being " pent in on every ſide, he found his endeavours fruit- " leſs. Obliged thus to ſtay, and looking up to me, " waiting for ſome freſh matter for ridicule, GOD was " pleaſed to prick him to the heart. He came to Mr. " *P.* full of horror, confeſſed his crimes, and longed " to aſk my pardon." Letter DLXVI.

" would

" would be like lions robbed of their whelps; " but if it pleaſed God to give him ſucceſs, envy " would endeavour to eclipſe his glory; he had " need, therefore, if he went, to go with a ſingle " eye; and then, there was no doubt, but if " providence really called him, he would find his " ſtrength proportioned to the day." About the ſame time, Mr. *Sherburne*, another of Mr. *Whitefield*'s friends, being appointed one of the Commiſſaries, told him, ' He muſt favour the expedi- ' tion, otherwiſe the ſerious people would be diſ- ' couraged from enliſting; not only ſo, but in- ' ſiſted he ſhould give him a motto for his flag, ' for the encouragement of the ſoldiers.' This he refuſed to do, as it would be acting out of character. But Mr. *Sherburne* would take no denial. He therefore, at laſt, gave them one, *Nil deſperandum Chriſto Duce*. " If *Chriſt* be Captain, " no fear of a defeat." Upon which great numbers enliſted (*l*). And before their embarkation, the officers deſired him to give them a ſermon. This he readily complied with, and preached from theſe words: " As many as were diſtreſſed, as " many as were diſcontented, as many as were in " debt, came to *David*, and he became a Cap- " tain over them." He ſpiritualized the ſubject, and told them, How diſtreſſed ſinners came to *Jeſus Chriſt*, the ſon of *David*; and in his application, exhorted the ſoldiers to behave like the ſoldiers of *David*, and the officers to act like

(*l*) Letter DLXXII.

David's worthies; then he made no manner of doubt, there would be good news from *Cape Breton*. After this, he preached to the General himſelf; who aſked him, If he would not be one of his chaplains? But he excuſed himſelf, and ſaid, "He ſhould think it an honour, but believed, "as he generally preached three times a day, in "various places, to large congregations, he could "do more ſervice by ſtirring up the people to "pray, and thereby ſtrengthening his, and his "ſoldiers hands." And in this practice he perſiſted during the ſiege of *Louiſburgh*. "I believe, adds he (*m*), "if ever people went with a diſintereſted view, the *New Englanders* did then. "Though many of them were raw and undiſciplined, yet numbers were ſubſtantial perſons "who left their farms, and willingly ventured all "for their country's good. An amazing ſcene of "providences appeared (*n*), and though ſome diſcouraging accounts were ſent during the latter "end of the ſiege; yet in about ſix weeks, news "was brought of the ſurrender of *Louiſburgh*. "Numbers flocked from all quarters, to hear a "thankſgiving ſermon upon the occaſion. And "I truſt the bleſſing beſtowed on the country, "through the thankſgivings of many, redounded to the glory of God."

(*m*) M. S. and Letter DLXXII.

(*n*) See Mr. *Prince*'s Sermon on that occaſion.

The

The *New England* people had, ſome time ago, offered to build him a large houſe to preach in; but as this ſcheme might have abridged his liberty of itinerating, he thanked them for their kind offer, and at the ſame time begged leave to refuſe the accepting of it (*o*). As his bodily ſtrength increaſed, and his health grew better, he began to move farther ſouthward; and, after preaching eaſtward, as far as *Caſcobay* and *North Yarmouth*, he went through *Connecticutt*, *Plymouth*, *Rhode-Iſland*, preaching to thouſands, generally twice a day. " And though," ſays he (*p*), " there was " much ſmoke, yet every day I had more and " more convincing proof, that a bleſſed Goſpel-" fire had been kindled in the hearts both of " miniſters and people. At *New York*, where I " preached as uſual, I found that the ſeed ſown, " had ſprung up abundantly: and at the eaſt-" end of *Long Iſland* ſaw many inſtances. In my " way to *Philadelphia*, I had the pleaſure of " preaching, by an interpreter, to ſome convert-" ed *Indians*, and of ſeeing near fifty young ones " in one ſchool, near *Free-hold*, learning the Aſ-" ſembly's Catechiſm. A bleſſed awakening had " been begun, and carried on among the *Dela-" ware Indians*, by the inſtrumentality of Mr. " *David Brainard* (*q*), ſuch a one as hath not

(*o*) Letter DLXVII.

(*p*) M. S.

(*q*) See his Life and Journals.

" been heard of ſince the awakening in *New* " *England* by the venerable Mr. *Elliot*, who uſed " to be ſtiled the Apoſtle of the *Indians*; his " brother followed him. Mr. *William Tennent*, " whoſe party I found much upon the advance, " ſeemed to encourage their endeavours with all " his heart.

" His brother, Mr. *Gilbert Tennent*, being " earneſtly ſollicited thereto, I found ſettled in " the place formerly erected at the beginning of " the awakening. The gentlemen offered me " eight hundred pounds a year, only to preach " among them ſix months, and to travel the " other ſix months where I would. Nothing re- " markable happened, during my way ſouth- " ward. But when I came to *Virginia*, I found " that the word of the Lord had run and was " glorified. During my preaching at *Glaſgow*, " ſome perſons wrote ſome of my extempore ſer- " mons, and printed them almoſt as faſt as I " preached them. Some of theſe were carried to " *Virginia*, and one of them fell into the hands " of *Samuel Morris*. He read and found bene- " fit *(r)*. He then read them to others; they " were awakened and convinced. A fire was " kindled; oppoſition was made; other labourers " were ſent for; and many, both white people " and negroes, were converted to the Lord.

(r) See this more fully narrated Hiſt. Coll. Book IV. Chap. V. Sect. 22.

" In

" In *North Carolina*, where I ſtayed too ſhort a " time, little was done. At *Georgia*, through " the badneſs of the inſtitution, and the Truſtees " obſtinacy in not altering it, my load of debt " and care was greatly increaſed, and at times " almoſt overwhelmed me. But I had the plea- " ſure of ſeeing one, who came as a player from " *New York*, now converted unto God, and a " preacher of *Jeſus Chriſt*. One Mr. *Ratteray* " brought me ten pounds: and at my return " northward, freſh ſupplies were raiſed up. The " generous *Charles-town* people raiſed a ſubſcrip- " tion of three hundred pounds, with which I " bought land, being cheap, during the war; " and a plantation, and a few negroes were pur- " chaſed at *Indian-land*. Thus, for a while, the " gap was ſtopped. I preached a ſermon upon " the Rebellion. Was very ſick at *Philadel-* " *phia*; kindly received at *Bohemia*, and at *New-* " *York*.

" As itinerating was my delight, and *Ame-* " *rica*, as being a new world, particularly plea- " ſing, I now began to think of returning no " more to my native country. But travelling, " care, and a load of debt, contracted not for " myſelf, but the Orphan-houſe, weighed me " down. And being much troubled with ſtitches " in my ſide, I was adviſed to go to *Bermudas*, " for the recovery of my health *(s)*." He accordingly

(s) In his Letters during this period, are the following paſſages:

cordingly embarked, and landed there the 15th of *March*, 1748.

" *Auguſt* 26, 1746. The door, for my uſefulneſs, " opens wider and wider. I love to range in the *Ame-* " *rican* woods, and ſometimes think I ſhall never re- " turn to *England* any more.

" *October* 8. I have had ſome ſweet times with ſeve- " ral of the *Lutheran* miniſters at *Philadelphia*.

" *November* 8. I have lately been in ſeven counties " in *Maryland*, and preached to great congregations.

May 21, 1747. I have now been upon the ſtretch, " preaching conſtantly for almoſt three weeks. My " body is often extremely weak, but the joy of the " LORD is my ſtrength; and by the help of GOD, I " intend going on till I drop, or this poor carcaſe can " hold out no more. Theſe ſouthern colonies lie in " darkneſs, and yet, as far as I find, are as willing to " receive the Goſpel, as others. If ſome good books " could be purchaſed, to diſpoſe among poor people, " much good might be done.

" *June* 1. The congregations yeſterday were exceed- " ing large. I am ſick and well, as I uſed to be in " *England*; but the Redeemer fills me with comfort, " I am determined, in his ſtrength, to die fighting.

" *June* 4. I have omitted preaching one night to " oblige my friends, that they may not charge me with " murdering myſelf; but I hope yet to die in the pul- " pit, or ſoon after I come out of it.

" *June* 23. Since my laſt, I have been ſeveral times " on the verge of eternity. At preſent, I am ſo weak " that I cannot preach. It is hard work to be ſilent, " but I muſt be tried every way.

" *June* 29. GOD has been pleaſed to bring my body " to the very brink of the grave, by convulſions, gra- " vel, a nervous cholic, and a violent fever. For this " week paſt, I have not preached; but ſince my " leaving *Philadelphia*, about three days ago, I ſeem- " ed to have gathered ſtrength, and hope once more, " to-morrow, to proclaim amongſt poor ſinners, the " unſearchable riches of *Jeſus Chriſt*. I purpoſe to go

" to

" to *Boſton*, and return by land, ſo as to reach *Charles-*
" *town* by *November*.

" *July* 4. At preſent, I am very weakly, and ſcarce
" able to preach above once or twice a week.

" *September* 11. We ſaw great things in *New Eng-*
" *land*. The flocking and power that attended the word,
" was like unto that ſeven years ago. Weak as I was,
" and have been, I was enabled to travel eleven hun-
" dred miles, and preach daily. I am now going to
" *Georgia* to winter."

CHAP.

CHAP. XIII.

From his Arrival at the Bermudas, *to his Return to* London *in* July 1748.

MR. *Whitefield* met with the kindeſt reception at *Bermudas*, and for above a month, he preached generally twice a day, traverſing the iſland from one end to the other: but his activity, uſefulneſs, and treatment, will beſt appear by an extract from his manuſcript journal of that period.

" The ſimplicity and plainneſs of the people, " together with the pleaſant ſituation of the " iſland, much delighted me.——The Rev. Mr. " *Holiday*, miniſter of *Spaniſh-Point*, received me " in a moſt affectionate chriſtian manner, and " begged I would make his houſe my home.— " In the evening, I expounded at the houſe of " Mr. *Savage* of *Port-Royal*, which was very " commodious, and which alſo he would have " me make my home.——I went with Mr. *Sa-* " *vage*, in a boat lent us by Captain ————, " to the town of *St. George*, in order to pay our " reſpects to the Governor. All along we had a " moſt pleaſant proſpect of the other part of the " iſland; but a more pleaſant one I never ſaw. " One Mrs. *Smith*, of *St. George*'s, for whom I had " a letter of recommendation from my dear old

" friend

" friend Mr. *Smith* of *Charles-Town*, received me
" into into her houſe. About noon, with one of
" the council and Mr. *Savage*, I waited upon the
" Governor. He received us courteouſly, and
" invited us to dine with him and the council at a
" tavern. We accepted the invitation, and all
" behaved with great civility and reſpect. After
" the Governor roſe from table, he deſired, if I
" ſtayed in town on the *Sunday*, that I would dine
" with him at his own houſe.

" *Sunday*, *March* 20, read prayers, and preached
" twice this day, to what were eſteemed here large
" auditories, in the morning at *Spaniſh-Point* church,
" and in the evening at *Brackiſh-pond* church, about
" two miles diſtant from each other. In the af-
" ternoon I ſpoke with greater freedom than in
" the morning, and I truſt not altogether in vain.
" All were attentive—ſome wept. I dined with
" Colonel *Butterfield*, one of the council, and re-
" ceived ſeveral invitations to other gentlemen's
" houſes. May God bleſs and reward them, and
" incline them to open their heart to receive the
" Lord *Jeſus!* *Amen* and *Amen!*

" *Wedneſday*, *March* 23, dined with Capt. *Gibbs*,
" and went from thence and expounded at the
" houſe of Capt. *F——le*, at *Hunbay*, about two
" miles diſtant. The company was here alſo large,
" attentive, and affected. Our Lord gave me
" utterance: I expounded on the firſt part of the
" viiith chapter of *Jeremiah*. After lecture, Mr.
" *Riddle*, a counſellor, invited me to his houſe,
" as did Mr. *Paul*, an aged preſbyterian miniſter,

" to

" to his pulpit; which I complied with upon con-
" dition the report was true, that the Governor
" had ſerved the miniſters with an injunction that
" I ſhould not preach in the churches.

" *Friday*, *March* 25, Was prevented preaching
" yeſterday by the rain, which continued from
" morning till night; but this afternoon God gave
" me another opportunity of declaring his eternal
" truths to a large company at the houſe of one
" Mr. *B*——*s*, who laſt night ſent me a letter of
" invitation.

" *Sunday*, *March* 27. Glory be to God! I hope
" this has been a profitable ſabbath to many ſouls:
" It has been a pleaſant one to mine. Both morn-
" ing and afternoon I preached to a large auditory,
" for *Bermudas*, in Mr. *Paul*'s meeting-houſe,
" which I ſuppoſe contains above four hundred.
" Abundance of negroes, and many others, were
" in the veſtry, porch, and about the houſe.
" The word ſeemed to be clothed with a convinc-
" ing power, and to make its way into the hearts
" of the hearers. Between ſermons, I was enter-
" tained very civilly in a neighbouring houſe:
" Judge *Baſcom* and three more of the council
" came thither; each gave me an invitation to
" his houſe.—O how does the Lord make way
" for a poor ſtranger in a ſtrange land!—After
" the ſecond ſermon, I dined with Mr. *Paul*, and
" in the evening expounded to a very large com-
" pany at Counſellor *Riddle*'s.—My body was
" ſomewhat weak, but the Lord carried me
" through, and cauſed me to go to reſt rejoicing.

" May

" May I thus go to my grave, when my ceaſeleſs " uninterrupted reſt ſhall begin!

" *Monday*, *March* 28. Dined this day at Mrs. " *D——l*'s, mother-in-law to my dear friend the " Rev. Mr. *Smith*; and afterwards preached to " more than a large houſe full of people, on " *Matt.* ix. 12. Towards the concluſion of the " ſermon, the hearers began to be more affected " than I have yet ſeen them. Surely the Lord " *Jeſus* will give me ſome ſeals in this iſland! " Grant this, O Redeemer, for thy infinite mercy's " ſake!

" *Thurſday*, *March* 31. Dined on *Tueſday* at " Colonel *Corbuſiers*; and on *Wedneſday*, at Colonel " *Gilbert*'s, both of the council, and found, by " what I could hear, that ſome good had been " done, and many prejudices removed. Who " ſhall hinder, if God will work? Went to an " iſland this afternoon, called *Ireland*, upon which " live a few families, and to my ſurprize, found a " great many gentlemen and other people, with " my friend Mr. *Holyday*, who came from different " quarters to hear me.—Before I began preach- " ing, I went round to ſee a moſt remarkable " cave, which very much diſplayed the exquiſite " workmanſhip of Him, who in his ſtrength ſet- " teth faſt the mountains, and is girded about " with power. Whilſt I was in the cave, quite " unexpectedly I turned and ſaw Counſellor *Rid-* " *dle*, who with his ſon came to hear me, and " whilſt we were in the boat told me, that he had

" been

" been with the Governor, who declared he had " no perſonal prejudice againſt me, and wondered " I did not come to town and preach there, for it " was the deſire of the people; and that any houſe " in the town, the court-houſe not excepted, ſhould " be at my ſervice. Thanks be to God for ſo " much favour!—If his cauſe requires it, I ſhall " have more.—He knows my heart: I value the " favour of man no farther than as it makes room " for the goſpel, and gives me a larger ſcope to " promote the glory of God. There being no " capacious houſe upon the iſland, I preached for " the firſt time here in the open air. All heard " very attentive, and it was very pleaſant after " ſermon to ſee ſo many boats full of people re- " turning from the worſhip of God. I talked ſe- " rioufly to ſome in our own boat, and began to " ſing a pſalm, in which they readily joined.

" *Sunday, April* 3. Preached twice this day at " Mr. *Paul*'s meeting-houſe, as on the laſt ſabbath, " but with greater freedom and power, eſpecially " in the morning, and I think to as great, if not " greater auditories. Dined with Colonel *H—vy*, " another of the council; viſited a ſick woman, " where many came to hear, and expounded after- " wards to a great company at Capt. *John Dorrel*'s, " Mrs. *D——l*'s ſon, who with his wife courte- " ouſly entertained me, and deſired me to make " his houſe my home.—So true is that promiſe of " our Lord's, 'That whoſoever leaves father or " mother, houſes or lands, ſhall have in this life

' a hun-

" a hundred-fold with perſecution, and in the " world to come life everlaſting.' Lord, I have " experienced the one; in thy good time grant " that I may experience the other alſo!

" *Wedneſday, April* 6. Preached yeſterday at " the houſe of Mr. *Anthony Smith*, of *Baylis Bay*, " with a conſiderable degree of warmth, and rode " afterwards to *St. George*'s, the only town on the " iſland. The gentlemen of the town had ſent " me an invitation by Judge *Baſcome*, and he with " ſeveral others came to viſit me at my lodgings, " and informed me, that the Governor deſired to " ſee me.—About ten I waited upon his Excel- " lency, who received me with great civility, and " told me he had no objection againſt my perſon " or my principles, having never yet heard me, " and he knew nothing in reſpect to my conduct " in moral life, that might prejudice him againſt " me; but his inſtructions were, to let none preach " in the iſland, unleſs he had a written licence to " preach ſomewhere in *America* or the *Weſt-Indies*: " at the ſame time he acknowledged it was but a " matter of mere form. I informed his Excel- " lency, that I had been regularly inducted to the " pariſh of *Savannah*; that I was ordained prieſt " by letters dimiſſory from my Lord of *London*, " and under no church cenſure from his Lordſhip; " and would always read the church prayers, if " the clergy would give me the uſe of their " churches. I added farther, that a miniſter's " pulpit was looked upon as his freehold, and that

" I knew

" I knew one clergyman who had denied his own " Diocesan the use of his pulpit. But I told his " Excellency, I was satisfied with the liberty he " allowed me, and would not act contrary to his " injunction. I then begged leave to be dismissed, " because I was to preach at eleven o'clock. His " Excellency said he intended to do himself the " pleasure to hear me. At eleven the church-bell " rung, the church-bible, prayer-book, and cu- " shion were sent to the town-house.—The Go- " vernor, several of the council, the minister of " the parish, and assembly-men, with a great " number of the town's-people, assembled in great " order. I was very sick, through a cold I catched " last night; but I read the church prayers, (the " first lesson was the xvth of the first book of *Sa-* " *muel)* and preached on those words, " Righte- " ousness exalteth a nation." Being weak and " faint, and having much of the head-ach, I did " not do that justice to my subject, as I sometimes " am enabled to do; but the Lord so helped me, " that, as I found afterwards, the Governor and " the other gentlemen expressed their approbation, " and acknowledged they did not expect to be so " well entertained.—Not unto me, O Lord, not " unto me, but unto thy free grace be all the " glory!

" After sermon, Dr. *F——bs*, and Mr. *P——t*, " the collector, came to me, and desired me to " favour them and the gentlemen of the town " with my company to dine with them. I accepted

" the invitation.—The Governor and the Preſident
" and Judge *Baſcome* were there. All wondered
" at my ſpeaking ſo freely and fluently without
" notes. The Governor aſked me whether I uſed
" minutes. --I anſwered, No. He ſaid it was a
" great gift. At table his Excellency introduced
" ſomething of religion, by aſking me the mean-
" ing of the word *Hades*. Several other things
" were ſtarted about free-will, *Adam*'s fall, pre-
" deſtination, &c. to all which God enabled me to
" anſwer ſo pertinently, and taught me to mix the
" *utile* and *dulce* ſo together, that all at table
" ſeemed highly pleaſed, ſhook me by the hand,
" and invited me to their reſpective houſes. The
" Governor, in particular, aſked me to dine with
" him on the morrow, and Dr. *F——b*, one of
" his particular intimates, invited me to drink tea
" in the afternoon. I thanked all, returned pro-
" per reſpects, and went to my lodgings with
" ſome degree of thankfulneſs for the aſſiſtance
" vouchſafed me, and abaſed before God at the
" conſideration of my unſpeakable unworthineſs.
" In the afternoon, about five o'clock, I ex-
" pounded the parable of the prodigal ſon to
" many people at a private houſe, and in the
" evening had liberty to ſpeak freely and cloſely
" to thoſe that ſupped with me. O that this may
" be the beginning of good goſpel times to the in-
" habitants of this town! Lord, teach me to deal
" prudently with them, and cauſe them to melt
" under thy word!

" *Friday*, *April* 8. Preached yeſterday with " great clearneſs and freedom, to about fourſcore " people at a houſe on *David*'s iſland, over " againſt St. *George*'s town; went and lay at Mr. " *Holiday*'s, who came in a boat to fetch me; and " this day I heard him preach and read prayers, " after which I took the ſacrament from him. " Honeſt man, he would have had me adminiſter " and officiate; but I choſe not to do it, leſt I " ſhould bring him into trouble after my depar- " ture. However, in the afternoon I preached at " one Mr. *Tod*'s, in the ſame pariſh, to a very " large company indeed. The Lord was with me. " My heart was warm, and what went from the " heart, I truſt went to the heart, for many were " affected. O that they may be converted alſo! " Then will it be a *good Friday* indeed to their " ſouls.

" *Sunday*, *April* 10. Dined and converſed yeſ- " terday very agreeably with Judge *Baſcome*; who " ſeems to have the greateſt inſight into the dif- " ference between the *Arminian* and *Calviniſtical* " ſcheme of any one I have yet met with upon the " iſland.—In the afternoon, I viſited a ſick para- " lytic, and this day I preached twice again at " Mr. *Paul*'s meeting-houſe. The congregations " were rather larger than ever, and the power " of God ſeemed to be more amongſt them. I " think I ſee a viſible alteration for the better " every Lord's-day. Bleſſed be God! In the " evening I expounded at Mr. *Joſeph Dorrell*'s,

" (where I dined) to a very large company; then " went to his kinſman's, my uſual lodging on *Saturday* and *Sunday* evenings, who with his wife " and other friends, ſeemed kinder and kinder " daily.—Good meaſure preſſed down and running " over, may the Lord, both as to ſpirituals and " temporals, return into all their boſoms!

" *Saturday*, *April* 16. Preached ſince Lord's-" day at five different houſes, to concerned and " affected congregations, at different parts of the " iſland, but was more indiſpoſed one night after " going to bed, than I had been for ſome time. " On two of the days of this week, I dined with " the Preſident and Captain *Spafford*, one of the " council, both which entertained me with the " utmoſt civility.

" *Sunday* 17. Still God magnifies his power " and goodneſs more and more. This morning " we had a pleaſing ſight at Mr. *Paul*'s meeting-" houſe. I began to preach, and the people to " hear and be affected as in days of old at home. " Indeed the proſpect is encouraging. Praiſe the " Lord, O my ſoul! After preaching twice to " large congregations in the meeting-houſe, I at " the deſire of the parents, preached in the even-" ing a ſermon at the funeral of a little boy about " five years of age. A great number of people " attended, and the Lord enabled me ſo to ſpeak " as to affect many of the hearers. Bleſſed be " the Lord for this day's work! Not unto me,

" O Lord, not unto me, but unto thy free grace " be all the glory!

" *Sunday*, *April* 24. The laſt week being rainy, " I preached only five times in private houſes, " and this day but once in the meeting-houſe; " but I hope neither time without effect. This " evening expounded at Counſellor *Riddle*'s, who " with the other gentlemen, treats me with greater " reſpect every day. Colonel *Gilbert*, one of the " council, has lent me his horſe during my ſtay, " and Mr. *D——ll* this morning informed me of " a deſign the gentlemen had, to raiſe a contribu- " tion to help me to diſcharge my arrears, and ſup- " port my orphan family. Thanks be given to thy " name, O God! Thou knoweſt all things; thou " knoweſt that I want to owe no man any thing, " but love and provide for *Betheſda* after my de- " ceaſe. Thou haſt promiſed thou wilt fulfil the " deſires of them that fear thee. I believe, Lord, " help my unbelief, that thou wilt fulfil this deſire " of my ſoul. Even ſo, *Amen!*

" *Saturday*, *April* 30. Preached ſince Lord's- " day, two funeral ſermons, and at five different " houſes in different parts of the iſland to ſtill " larger and larger auditories, and perceived the " people to be affected more and more. Twice " or thrice I preached without doors. Riding in " the ſun, and preaching very earneſtly, a little " fatigued me; ſo that this evening I was obliged " to lie down for ſome time. *Faint, yet purſuing*; " muſt be my motto ſtill.

" *Sunday*, *May*, 1. This morning was a little " ſick; but I truſt God gave us a happy begin- " ning of the new month. I preached twice with " power, eſpecially in the morning, to a very great " congregation in the meeting-houſe; and in the " evening, having given previous notice, I preached " about four miles diſtant, in the fields, to a large " company of negroes, and a number of white " people who came to hear what I had to ſay to " them. I believe, in all, there were near fifteen " hundred people. As the ſermon was intended " for the negroes, I gave the auditory warning, " that my diſcourſe would be chiefly directed to " them, and that I ſhould endeavour to imitate " the example of *Elijah*, who when he was about " to raiſe the child, contracted himſelf to its " length. The negroes ſeemed very ſenſible and " attentive. When I aſked them, whether all of " them did not deſire to go to heaven, one of " them with a very audible voice ſaid, 'Yes, Sir.' " This cauſed a little ſmiling; but in general, " every thing was carried on with great decency; " and I believe the Lord enabled me ſo to diſ- " courſe, as to touch the negroes, and yet not to " give them the leaſt umbrage to ſlight or behave " imperiouſly to their maſters. If ever a miniſter " in preaching, need the wiſdom of the ſerpent to " be joined with the harmleſſneſs of the dove, it " muſt be when diſcourſing to negroes. Vouch- " ſafe me this favour, O God, for thy dear Son's " ſake!

" *Monday, May* 2. Upon enquiry, I found " that ſome of the negroes did not like my " preaching, becauſe I told them of their curſe- " ing, ſwearing, thieving, and lying. One or " two of the worſt of them, as I was in- " formed, went away. Some ſaid, they would " not go any more: They liked Mr. *M——r* " better, for he never told them of theſe " things; and I ſaid, their hearts were as black as " their faces. They expected, they ſaid, to hear " me ſpeak againſt their maſters. Bleſſed be " God, that I was directed not to ſay any thing, " this firſt time, to the maſters at all, though " my text led me to it. It might have been of " bad conſequence, to tell them their duty, or " charge them too roundly with the neglect of " it, before their ſlaves. They would mind all I " ſaid to their maſters, and, perhaps, nothing " that I ſaid to them. Every thing is beautiful " in its ſeaſon. Lord, teach me always that due " ſeaſon, wherever I am called, to give either " black or white, a portion of thy word! How- " ever, others of the poor creatures, I hear, were " very thankful, and came home to their maſter's " houſes, ſaying, that they would ſtrive to ſin " no more. Poor hearts! Theſe different ac- " counts affected me; and upon the whole, I " could not help rejoicing, to find that their con- " ſciences were ſo far awake.

" *Saturday, May* 7. In my converſation theſe " two days, with ſome of my friends, I was di-

" verted

" verted much, in hearing ſeveral things that " paſſed among the poor negroes, ſince my preach- " ing to them laſt *Sunday*. One of the women, " it ſeems, ſaid, ' That if the book I preached ' out of was the beſt book that was ever bought ' at, and come out of *London*, ſhe was ſure it ' had never all that in it, which I ſpoke to the ' negroes.' " The old man, who ſpoke out loud " laſt *Sunday*, and ſaid, ' Yes,' when I aſked " them, Whether all the negroes would not go " to heaven? Being queſtioned by ſomebody, " Why he ſpoke out ſo? Anſwered, ' That the ' gentleman put the queſtion once or twice to ' them, and the other fools had not the manners ' to make me any anſwer, till, at laſt, I ſeemed ' to point at him, and he was aſhamed that no ' body ſhould anſwer me, and therefore he did.' " Another, wondering why I ſaid, ' Negroes had ' black hearts;' was anſwered by his black bro- " ther thus: ' Ah, thou fool, doſt thou not un- ' derſtand it? He means black with ſin.' Two " more girls were overheard by their miſtreſs, " talking about religion, and they ſaid, ' They ' knew, if they did not repent, they muſt be ' damned.' From all which I infer, that theſe " *Bermudas* negroes are more knowing than I ſup- " poſed; that their conſciences are awake, and " conſequently prepared, in a good meaſure, for " hearing the Goſpel preached unto them.

" *Sunday*, *May* 8. This alſo, I truſt, has been " a good ſabbath. In the morning I was helped

" to preach powerfully to a melting, and rather a " larger congregation than ever, in Mr. *Paul*'s " Meeting-houſe; and in the evening, to almoſt " as large a congregation of black and white as " laſt *Sunday*, in the fields, near my hearty friend " Mr. *Holyday*'s houſe. To ſee ſo many black " faces was affecting. They heard very atten- " tively, and ſome of them now began to weep. " May God grant them a godly ſorrow, that " worketh repentance not to be repented of!

" *Friday*, *May* 13. This afternoon preached " over the corpſe of Mr. *Paul*'s eldeſt ſon, about " twenty-four years of age; and by all I could " hear and judge of by converſing with him, he " did, indeed, die in the Lord. I viſited him " twice laſt Lord's-day, and was quite ſatisfied " with what he ſaid, though he had not much " of the ſenſible preſence of God. I find he was a " preacher upon his death-bed. For he exhort- " ed all his companions to love *Chriſt* in ſincerity, " and bleſſed his brother and ſiſter, and, I think, " his father and mother juſt before his departure. " A great many people attended the funeral. I " preached on *Luke* vii. 13. 'And when the 'Lord ſaw her, he had compaſſion on her, and 'ſaid unto her, weep not.' " Many were affected " in the application of my diſcourſe, and, I " truſt, ſome will be induced, by this young man's " good example, to remember their Redeemer in " the days of their youth. Grant it, O Lord, " for thy dear Son's ſake!

" *Sunday*,

" *Sunday, May* 15. Praiſe the Lord, O my " ſoul, and all that is within thee praiſe his holy " name! This morning I preached my farewel " Sermon at Mr. *Paul*'s Meeting-houſe, it was " quite full, and, as the Preſident ſaid, above a " hundred and fifty whites, beſides blacks, were " round the houſe. Attention ſat on every face; " and when I came to take my leave, oh, what " a ſweet unaffected weeping was there to be " ſeen every where. I believe there were few " dry eyes. The negroes likewiſe without doors, " I heard wept plentifully. My own heart was " affected, and though I have parted from friends " ſo often, yet I find every freſh parting almoſt " unman's me, and very much affects my heart. " Surely, a great work is begun in ſome ſouls " at *Bermudas*. Carry it on, O Lord, and if it " be thy will ſend me to this dear people again. " Even ſo, Lord *Jeſus*. *Amen!*

" After ſermon, I dined with three of the " Council, and other Gentlemen and Ladies, at " Captain *Baſcomes*; and from thence we went " to a funeral, at which Mr. *M——r* preached; " and after that I expounded on our Lord's " Transfiguration, at the houſe of one Mrs. " *Harvey*, ſiſter to dear Mr. *Smith* of *Charles-* " *town*. The houſe was exceeding full, and it " was ſuppoſed above three hundred ſtood in the " yard. The Lord enabled me to lift up my " voice like a trumpet. Many wept. Mr. " *M——r* returned from the funeral with me,

" and

" and attended the lecture, as did the three " Counſellors, with whom I converſed very free- " ly. May God reward them, and all the dear " people of the iſland, for thoſe many and great " favours they have conferred on me, who am " the chief of ſinners, and leſs than the leaſt of " all ſaints!

" *Sunday, May* 22. Bleſſed be God! the little " leaven thrown into the three meaſures of meal " begins to ferment, and work almoſt every day, " for the week paſt. I have converſed with ſouls " loaded with a ſenſe of their ſins, and, as far " as I can judge, really pricked to the heart. " I preached only three times, but to almoſt three " times larger auditories than uſual. Indeed the " fields are white, ready unto harveſt. God has " been pleaſed to bleſs private viſits. Go where " I will, upon the leaſt notice, houſes are crowded, " and the poor ſouls that follow are ſoon drenched " in tears. This day I took, as it were, another " farewel. As the ſhip did not ſail, I preached " at *Somerſet* in the morning, to a large congre- " gation in the fields, and expounded in the " evening to as large one at Mr. *Harvey*'s houſe, " round which ſtood many hundreds of people. " But in the morning and evening how did the " poor ſouls weep. The Lord ſeemed to be with " me in a peculiar manner, and though I was " ready to die with heat and ſtraining, yet I " was enabled to ſpeak louder, and with greater " power, I think, than I have been before.

" Gifts

" Gifts and grace, especially in the evening,
" were both in exercise. After the service, when
" I lay down on the bed to rest, many came
" weeping bitterly around me, and took their
" last farewel. Though my body was very weak,
" yet my soul was full of comfort. It magnified
" the Lord, and my spirit rejoiced in God my
" Saviour. Abundance of prayers and blessings
" were put up for my safe passage to *England*,
" and speedy return to *Bermudas* again. May
" they enter into the ears of the Lord of *Sabaoth!*
" For, God willing, I intend visiting these dear
" people once more. In the mean while, with
" all humility and thankfulness of heart will I
" here, O Lord, set up my *Ebenezer*. For
" hitherto surely thou hast helped me! I cannot
" help thinking that I was led to this Island
" by a peculiar providence. My dear friend,
" Mr. *Smith* of *Charles-town*, has been made
" especially instrumental thereto. Thanks be to
" the Lord for sending me hither. I have been
" received in a manner I dared not expect, and
" have met with little, very little opposition in-
" deed. The inhabitants seem to be plain and
" open hearted. They have also been open
" handed. For they have loaded me with pro-
" visions for my sea-store; and in the several
" parishes, by a private voluntary contribution,
" have raised me upwards of a hundred pounds
" *sterling*. This will pay a little of *Bethesda*'s
" debt, and enable me to make such a remit-

" tance

" tance to my dear yoke-fellow, as may keep " her from being embarraſſed, or too much be- " holden in my abſence. Bleſſed be God, for " bringing me out of my embarraſſments by de- " grees! May the Lord reward all my bene- " factors a thouſand fold! I hear that what " was given, was given exceeding heartily, and " people only lamented that they could do no " more."

After having tranſmitted to *Georgia*, what was given to him for the Orphan-houſe, and dreading to go back to *America* in that ſeaſon of heat, for fear of relapſing, and having preſſing calls to *England*, he took the opportunity of a brig, and in twenty-eight days arrived at *Deal* (*a*). The next

(*a*) During this voyage, among other Letters, he wrote the following:

" *June* 24, 1748. (on board). Yeſterday I made an " end of reviſing all my Journals. Alas! alas! in " how many things have I judged and acted wrong. " I have been too raſh and haſty in giving characters " both of places and perſons. Being fond of Scripture " language, I have often uſed a ſtile too apoſtolical, " and at the ſame time, I have been too bitter in my " zeal. Wild fire has been mixt with it, and I find " that I frequently wrote and ſpoke in my own ſpirit, " when I thought I was writing and ſpeaking by the " aſſiſtance of the Spirit of GOD. I have likewiſe too " much made inward impreſſions my rule of acting, " and too ſoon and too explicitly publiſhed what had " been better kept in longer, or told after my death. " By theſe things, I have hurt the bleſſed cauſe I " would defend, and alſo ſtirred up needleſs oppoſition. " This has humbled me much, and made me think of a " ſaying

next evening, *July* 6, 1748, he reached *London*, after an abſence of near four years.

" ſaying of Mr. *Henry*'s, ' *Joſeph* had more honeſty ' than he had policy, or he never would have told his ' dreams.' " At the ſame time, I cannot but praiſe " GOD, who filled me with ſo much of his holy fire, " and carried me, a poor weak youth, through ſuch a " torrent both of popularity and contempt, and ſet ſo " many ſeals to my unworthy miniſtrations. I bleſs " him for ripening my judgment a little more, for giv- " ing me to ſee and confeſs, and I hope, in ſome de- " gree, to correct and amend ſome of my miſtakes."

At this time, alſo, he finiſhed his " Abridgement of " Mr. *Law*'s Serious Call;" which he endeavoured to make more uſeful, by excluding whatever is not truly evangelical, and illuſtrating the ſubject more fully from the Holy Scriptures. See his Works, Vol. IV.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIV.

From his Arrival in London 1748, *to his going to* Ireland *in the Year* 1751.

ON Mr. *Whitefield*'s viſiting a few of his friends, immediately after his return, he found himſelf in no very agreeable ſituation. His congregation at the Tabernacle was ſadly ſcattered. And as to his outward circumſtances, he had ſold all his houſhold furniture, to help to pay the Orphan-houſe debt, which yet was far from being cancelled. But under all theſe diſcouragements, he was ſtill ſupported. His congregation was ſoon re-united, and received him with the greateſt joy. And at this time a very unexpected thing happened to him. Lady *Huntingdon*, before his arrival, had ordered Mr. *Howel Harris* to bring him to her houſe at *Chelſea*, as ſoon as he came aſhore. He went, and having preached twice, the Counteſs wrote to him, that ſeveral of the Nobility deſired to hear him. In a few days the Earl of *Cheſterfield*, and a whole circle of them attended; and having heard once, deſired they might hear him again. "I there-"fore preached again (ſays he) in the evening, "and went home, never more ſurprized at any inci-"dent

" dent in my life (*t*). All behaved quite well, " and were in some degree affected. The Earl of " *Chesterfield* thanked me, and said, ' Sir, I will ' not tell you what I shall tell others, how I ap- ' prove of you;' " or words to this purpose. " At last Lord *Bolingbroke* came to hear, sat like " an archbishop, and was pleased to say, ' I ' had done great justice to the divine attributes ' in my discourse (*u*).' " Soon afterwards her " Ladyship removed to town, where I preached " generally twice a week to very brilliant audi- " tories. Blessed be God, not without effectual " success on some."

In *September* 1748, he made a third visit to *Scotland*, where he met with a hearty welcome. Great multitudes flocked to hear him both at *Edinburgh* and *Glasgow*. " I have reason (says he, " Letter DCC) to believe some have been awak- " ened, and many quickened and comforted. " My old friends are more solidly so than ever, " and a foundation, I trust, has been laid for " doing much good, if ever the Lord should call " me thither again. Two Synods (*x*), and one " Presbytery,

(*t*) M. S. and Letter DCLXXIII.

(*u*) It is also said, that *David Hume*, Esq; of *Edinburgh*, was a hearer of Mr. *Whitefield*'s, and was much taken with his eloquence. Such testimonies are set down, not for their weight, but their singularity.

(*x*) He means the Synods of *Glasgow* and *Perth*, and the Presbytery of *Edinburgh*. What happened in the Synod of *Glasgow*, may be seen in a pamphlet, entitled, " A

" Presbytery, brought me upon the carpet; but " all has worked for good." While he was in *Scotland*,

" A fair and impartial Account of the Debate in the " Synod of *Glasgow* and *Air*, 6 *October* 1748, anent " employing Mr. *Whitefield*:" published at *Edinburgh* the same year, and supposed to be written by the Rev. Dr. *Erskine*, who was then minister at *Kirkintilloch*. The short history of the matter is this. A motion was made, tending to prohibit or discourage ministers from employing Mr. *Whitefield*. The speeches made in support of the motion, were upon the following topics. His being a priest of the Church of *England*. That he had not subscribed the *Formula*. His imprudencies. Chimerical scheme of the Orphan-house. Want of evidence, that the money he collects is rightly applied. Asserting that assurance is essential to faith. Encouraging a dependance on impulses and immediate revelations. Declaring on slender evidence, some people converted, and others carnal and unregenerated. Often, indeed, pretending to repent of his blunders, and retract; but as often relapsing into them. And lastly, his being under a sentence of suspension by Commissary *Garden*, from which he had appealed to the High Court of Chancery, and made oath to prosecute that appeal in a twelvemonth; and yet it was never prosecuted.

On the other hand, the ministers who were against the motion, spoke in this manner. I blush to think, said one, that any of our brethren should befriend a proposal, so contrary to that moderation and catholic spirit, which now is, and I hope ever shall be the glory of our Church. I am sensible, many things in the Church of *England* need reformation; but I honour her, notwithstanding, as our Sister Church. If Bishop *Butler*, Bishop *Sherlock*, or Bishop *Secker* were in *Scotland*, I should welcome them to my pulpit. In this I should imitate Mr. *Samuel Rutherford*, as firm a presbyterian as any of us, who yet employed Bishop *Usher*. There is no Law of *Christ*, no Act of Assembly prohibiting me to give my pulpit to an Episcopal, Independent, or Anabaptist

Scotland, he endeavoured to do all the ſervice he could to the *New Jerſey* College, and in conjunction

Anabaptiſt Miniſters, if of ſound principles in the fundamentals of Religion, and of a ſober life. Our Church expreſly enjoins, Act XIII. *April* 1711. that great tenderneſs is to be uſed to foreign proteſtants. The requiring ſtrangers to ſubſcribe our *Formula*, before they preach with us, would lay as effectual a bar againſt employing thoſe of Congregational Principles, or Preſbyterian Non-ſubſcribers, as thoſe of the Church of *England*.

As to Mr. *Whitefield*, ſaid another, there are few miniſters whoſe character has been ſo well atteſted, by the moſt competent judges, both at home and abroad. One thing I cannot but obſerve: thoſe who have ſpoken moſt warmly againſt Mr. *Whitefield* in this debate, acknowledge they have made little or no enquiry into his character: whereas thoſe on the other ſide, have made a very careful enquiry; and that enquiry has turned out entirely to their ſatisfaction. With regard to his imprudencies, there is a great difference betwixt blunders owing to a bad heart, and thoſe that are owing only to a miſinformed judgment: eſpecially, when the miſtakes that occaſioned them, have miſled ſeveral great and good men. Whether Mr. *Whitefield*'s ſcheme of the Orphan-houſe be prudent or not, it is demonſtrable it was honeſtly meant. The magiſtrates of *Savannah* publiſhed three years ago, in the *Philadelphia* Gazette, an affidavit that they had carefully examined Mr. *Whitefield*'s receipts and diſburſements, and found that what he had collected in behalf of the Orphans, had been honeſtly applied; and that beſides, he had given conſiderably to them of his own property. As to his maintaining, that aſſurance is eſſential to faith; encouraging an unwarrantable regard to impreſſions; and being too haſty in pronouncing men carnal or converted; his ſentiments in theſe particulars, have been altered for upwards of two years. And now he ſcarce preaches a ſermon, without guarding his hearers againſt relying on im-

junction with ſome miniſters who wiſhed well to that inſtitution (*y*), adviſed the ſending over a

preſſions, and telling them that faith, and a perſuaſion we are juſtified, are very different things, and that a holy life is the beſt evidence of a gracious ſtate. Theſe retractions are owing to a real change of ſentiment. Letters from correſpondents in *New England* ſhew, that this change is, at leaſt, of two years date, and that ever ſince it happened, he has preached and acted with remarkable caution. Laſtly, with reſpect to the proſecution of his appeal; Mr. *Whitefield* exerted himſelf to the utmoſt to get his appeal heard, but could not prevail on the Lord's Commiſſioners ſo much as once to meet on the affair; they, no doubt, thinking of Mr. *Garden*'s arbitrary proceedings with the contempt they deſerved. But ſay ſome, "Mr. *Whitefield* being under a ſuſpenſion "not yet reverſed, is now no miniſter." But for what was he ſuſpended? Why, for no other crime, than omitting to uſe the form of prayer preſcribed in the communion book, when officiating in a preſbyterian congregation. And ſhall a meeting of preſbyterian miniſters, pay any regard to a ſentence which had ſuch a foundation?

The iſſue of the debate was a rejecting of the motion by a vote, 27 to 13; and a reſolution which was ſo expreſt as to be a decent burial of it; laying no new reſtriction on miniſters from inviting ſtrangers, but leaving things preciſely as they were before. And they who choſe to give Mr. *Whitefield* their pulpits, never after met with any moleſtation. Upon the whole, the attacks made on Mr. *Whitefield*'s character, proved the occaſion of informing the Synod of the falſhood of many aſperſions thrown out againſt him, of the great increaſe of his prudence and caution, and the remarkable change of his ſentiments and behaviour, ſo far as either were offenſive. And thus what was intended for his reproach, turned out to his honour.

(*y*) See his Letter on this ſubject to Mr. *M'Laurin*. Letters DCCCXXXIV. and DCCCLXVIII.

miniſter

miniſter from *America* to make application in perſon. Which was afterwards done in the year 1754, when Mr. *Tennent* and Mr. *Davies* applied to the General Aſſembly, and obtained an appointment of a general collection. He alſo began to think of making his Orphan-houſe not only a receptacle for fatherleſs children, but alſo a place of literature and academical ſtudies. Such a place, he thought, was much wanted in the ſouthern parts of *America*; and if conducted in a proper manner, would be of great ſervice to the colony. He therefore, after his return to *England*, wrote to the Truſtees, ſignifying that this was his intention, if they would be pleaſed to put the colony upon another footing, and allow a limited uſe of negroes, without which he had long been of opinion, that *Georgia* never could be a flouriſhing province (z). Mean time, he went on in his uſual way, and with his uſual ſucceſs at *London*, *Briſtol*, and *Glouceſter*, during the winter. And in *February* 1749, made an excurſion to *Exeter* and *Plymouth*, where he found a ſtrange alteration in the people, ſince he had been firſt there, about five years before; they now received him with the greateſt joy, and were importunate to hear him; and many of them gave proofs of a ſolid converſion to God (a). "Now (ſays he) "*Plymouth* ſeems to be quite a new place to me."

(z) Letter DCCXIV.

(a) Letter DCCXXXIII. and M. S.

As his health was impaired in *London*, he loved to range (as he calls it) after precious ſouls. Though he never wanted to make a ſect, or to ſet himſelf at the head of a party.

" I have ſeen enough of popularity, (ſays he) " to be ſick of it; and did not the intereſt of " my bleſſed Maſter require my appearing in *(b)* " public, the world ſhould hear but little of me " hence forward." Yet he could not think of remitting his diligence in the work of the Goſpel. " I dread the thoughts of flagging in the " latter ſtages of my road," is an expreſſion that he often uſes in writing to his friends *(c)*. He was frequently very ill; but he imagined preaching and travelling did him ſervice. " Fear not " your weak body, (ſays he, in a letter to Mr. " *Hervey) (d)*; we are immortal till our work is " done. *Chriſt*'s labourers muſt live by miracle; " if not, I muſt not live at all; for God only " knows what I daily endure. My continual " vomitings almoſt kill me, and yet the pulpit is " my cure, ſo that my friends begin to pity me " leſs, and to leave off that ungrateful cau- " tion, ' Spare thyſelf.' I ſpeak this to encourage " you *(e)*."

In

(*b*) Letter DCCXLVII.

(*c*) Letter DCCLXXXVII. DCCCXCVII. and DCCCCXXIII.

(*d*) Letter DCCCXXX.

(*e*) About this time, he wrote " Remarks on a " Pamphlet, entitled, The Enthuſiaſm of Methodiſts " and

In *March* 1749, he returned to *London* from an excurſion of about ſix hundred miles in the weſt, where he had the pleaſure of ſeeing that his former viſits had been bleſſed with abundant ſucceſs (*f*). In *May* he went to *Portſmouth*, and preached every day for more than a week, to very large and attentive auditories. Many were brought under convictions, prejudices ſeemed to be univerſally removed, and people, that a few days before were ſpeaking all manner of evil againſt him, were very deſirous of his longer ſtay to preach the Goſpel (*g*) among them.

June 24. he writes from *Briſtol:* "Yeſterday God brought me here, after having carried "me a circuit of about eight hundred miles, "and enabled me to preach, I ſuppoſe, to up"wards of a hundred thouſand ſouls. I have "been in eight *Welch* counties, and, I think, we "have not had one dry meeting. The work in "*Wales* is much upon the advance, and likely to "increaſe daily. Had my dear Mr. *Hervey* been "there, to have ſeen the ſimplicity of ſo many

"and Papiſts compared." Wherein (with a candour very uncommon in controverſial writings) he ſays, "Several miſtakes in ſome parts of my paſt writings "and conduct are acknowledged, and my preſent "ſentiments concerning the Methodiſts explained." See his Works, Vol. IV.

(*f*) Letter DCCXLIII.

(*g*) Letter DCCLI.

" dear ſouls, I am perſuaded he would have ſaid, " *Sit anima mea cum Methodiſtis* (*h*)."

In the months of *July* and *Auguſt* he was at *London*, *Briſtol*, *Plymouth*, *Biddiford*, *Exeter*. When he returned to *London*, he had the pleaſure of a viſit from two *German* miniſters, who had been labouring among the *Jews*, and, it is ſaid, had been made inſtrumental in converting many of them (*i*).

In the month of *September* he went into *Northamptonſhire* and *Yorkſhire*; and preached at *Oundle*, *Abberford*, *Leeds*, and *Haworth*, where good Mr. *Grimſhaw* (who was ſo indefatigable in his endeavours to bring ſouls to *Chriſt*) was miniſter. In his church they had above a thouſand communicants, and in the church-yard about ſix thouſand hearers. At *Leeds*, the auditory conſiſted of above ten thouſand. Thither Mr. *Whitefield* was invited by one of the Rev. Mr. *Weſley*'s preachers, and by the ſocieties. And Mr. *Charles Weſley* coming there, gave notice of him to the people (*k*), and alſo introduced him to the pulpit in *Newcaſtle*, where he preached four times, and twice without doors.

It being now late in the year, he did not go forward to *Scotland*, but returned to *London*, after having preached about thirty times in *Yorkſhire*, and above ten times in *Cheſhire*, and *Lancaſhire*.

(*h*) Letter DCCLXII.
(*i*) Letter DCCLXXV.
(*k*) Letter DCCLXXVIII, DCCLXXIX.

He

He was alſo at *Sheffield* and *Nottingham*. And the congregations were every where large and ſerious. Only in one or two places, he had a little rough treatment; but this he did not mind, while he had reaſon to think many received real benefit (*l*). He arrived in *London* about the middle of *November*, and continued there till the beginning of *February*, employed in his uſual manner. Having offered to aſſiſt, occaſionally, at *Weſt-ſtreet* chapel, it was accepted. Accordingly, he preached four or five times there, and adminiſtered the ſacrament twice or thrice. Congregations were very large (*m*).

February 6, 1750. he writes from *Glouceſter* (*n*): "Though I left *London* in a very weak condition, "and the weather was but bad, I came here on "*Friday* evening, and was ſtrengthened to preach "on *Saturday*, and likewiſe on *Sunday* evening, "and twice the ſame day in the country, at the "New-houſe and at *Hampton*." And again from *Briſtol*, *February* 12. "Since I wrote laſt, we "have been favoured both in *Glouceſter* city, and "in the country, with very pleaſant and delightful ſeaſons (*o*). I have preached about twenty times, within theſe eight or nine days; and though frequently expoſed to rain and hail, am much better than when I left *London*." From

(*l*) Letter DCCLXXXI. DCCLXXXVI.
(*m*) Letter DCCCXIX. (*n*) Letter DCCCXIV.
(*o*) Letter DCCCXVI.

Briſtol he went to *Exeter*, and to *Plymouth*, and in his way met with the Rev. Mr. *Pearſall*, a diſſenting miniſter at *Taunton*, and Mr. *Darracott* at *Wellington*; both of whom he ſpeaks of in his Letters with the higheſt regard (*p*). At *Plymouth* he preached twelve times in ſix days, and the longer he preached, he had the greater number of hearers. His friends grew more zealous, and the fury of his enemies began to ſubſide. From thence he travelled near to the Land's-end, preaching in a great many places, ſuch as *Taviſtock*, *St. Ginny*'s (*q*), *Port Iſaac*, *Camelford*, *St. Andrews*, *Redruth*, *Gwinnop*, *St. Mewens*. All this he accompliſhed before the 21ſt of *March*, when we find him again at *Exeter*. "Invitations (ſays he) "are ſent to me from ſeveral places. I want "more tongues, more bodies, more ſouls for the "Lord *Jeſus*. Had I ten thouſand, he ſhould "have them all (*r*)."

In *April* he was at *London* and *Portſmouth*. And in *May* went to *Aſhby*, to wait on Lady *Huntingdon*, who had been ill. In his way thither, he had a moſt comfortable interview with the Rev.

(*p*) Letter DCCCXX.

(*q*) "Four of Mr. *Weſley*'s preachers were preſent, "and three clergymen, Mr. *Bennet* aged fourſcore, "Mr. *Thompſon*, and Mr. *Grigg*." Letter DCCCXXIV. "I found, as I went along, a moſt bleſſed work had "been carried on by the inſtrumentality of the Mr. "*Weſleys*, and their fellow-labourers." M. S.

(*r*) Letters DCCCXXIV, XXV, and XXVI.

Dr.

Dr. *Doddridge*, Mr. *Hervey* (*s*), and Dr. ———. (*t*) But at *Aſhby*, where it might have been leaſt expected, there was a riot made before Lady *Huntingdon*'s houſe, while the Goſpel was preaching: and in the evening, ſome people in their

(*s*) Mr. *Hervey* thus wrote of this interview to a friend:

'I have ſeen lately, that moſt excellent miniſter of 'the ever-bleſſed *Jeſus*, Mr. *Whitefield*. I dined, ſup- 'ped, and ſpent the evening with him at *Northampton*, 'in company with Dr. *Doddridge*, and two pious, inge- 'nious clergymen of the Church of *England*, both of 'them known to the learned world by their valuable 'writings. And ſurely, I never ſpent a more delight- 'ful evening, or ſaw one that ſeemed to make nearer 'approaches to the felicity of heaven. A gentleman of 'great worth and rank in the town, invited us to his 'houſe, and gave us an elegant treat; but how mean 'was his proviſion, how coarſe his delicacies, compared 'with the fruit of my friend's lips; they dropped as 'the honey-comb, and were a well of life. Surely, 'people do not know that amiable and exemplary man, 'or elſe, I cannot but think, inſtead of depreciating, 'they would applaud and love him. For my part, I 'never beheld ſo fair a copy of our Lord, ſuch a living 'image of the Saviour, ſuch exalted delight in God, 'ſuch enlarged benevolence to man, ſuch a ſteady faith 'in the divine promiſes, and ſuch a fervent zeal for the 'divine glory; and all this, without the leaſt moroſe- 'neſs of humour, or extravagancies of behaviour; 'ſweetened with the moſt engaging chearfulneſs of tem- 'per, and regulated by all the ſobriety of reaſon, and 'wiſdom of Scripture; in ſo much, that I cannot for- 'bear applying the wiſe man's encomium of an illuſtrious 'woman, to this eminent miniſter of the everlaſting 'Goſpel: "Many ſons have done virtuouſly, but thou "excelleſt them all."

(*t*) Letter DCCCXXXII.

return

return home narrowly escaped being murdered. The Justice being informed, sent a message, in order to bring the offenders before him. "So that "I hope, (says Mr. *Whitefield*) it will be over-"ruled for great good, and that the Gospel, for "the future, will have free course *(u)*."

After he left *Ashby*, he preached at *Radcliff* Church, *Nottingham* and *Sutton* with great success. "At *Nottingham*, (says he) several came "to me, enquiring, What they should do to be "saved? I preached there four times. One "evening, Lord *S.* and several gentlemen, were "present, and behaved with great decency. "Many thousands attended. Yesterday morning "I breakfasted with three dissenting ministers; "and Mr. *P——s*, who told me, that Lady "*P——* desired he would press me to preach "at the church. Yesterday, in the afternoon, I "preached at *Sutton*; and this morning *(x)* at "*Mansfield*." After leaving that place, he went to *Rotherham* and *Sheffield*. He was at *Leeds* in the end of *May*, and observes, "Methinks, I "am now got into another climate *(y)*, where "there are many of God's people." From thence he went to *Manchester*, *Rosindale*, and several other parts of *Lancashire*, *Kendal*, *Whitehaven*, *Cockermouth*, preaching generally twice a day, and arriv-

(u) Letter DCCCXXXV.

(x) Letter DCCCXXXVIII.

(y) Letter DCCCXL, and XLIX.

ed

ed at *Edinburgh*, *July* 6. having preached near a hundred times ſince he left *London*, and by a moderate computation, to above a hundred thouſand ſouls. "It is amazing (he writes) to ſee how "people are prepared, in places where I never "was before. What ſhall I render to the "Lord?"

At *Edinburgh* and *Glaſgow*, (in which places he ſpent the month of *July*, 1750) he was received, as uſual, in the moſt loving and tender manner, preaching generally twice a day to great multitudes, whoſe ſerioufneſs, and earneſt deſire to hear him, made him exert himſelf rather beyond his ſtrength. "By preaching always twice, (ſays "he) and once thrice, and once four times in a "day (z), I am quite weakened; but I hope to "recruit again. I am burning with a fever, and "have a violent cold; but *Chriſt*'s preſence makes "me ſmile at pain, and the fire of his love burns "up all fevers whatſoever." He left *Edinburgh*, *Auguſt* 3, and ſoon found himſelf much better for riding. At *Berwick*, one of the miniſters ſent him an offer of his pulpit, and he was informed that many more round that town, were willing to do the ſame. At his return to *London*, he preached ſeveral times at *Weſt-ſtreet* Chapel. He had alſo the pleaſure of Mr. *Hervey*'s company, who, at his deſire, came up to town, and lodged in his houſe. In the months of *September* and *October*

(z) Letter DCCCLI, and LV.

he

he made excurſions to *Portſmouth*, *Chatham*, *Glouceſter*, *Birmingham*, *Everſham*, *Wedneſbury*, and *Nottingham*; "ranging about, (as he expreſſes it) "to ſee who would believe the Goſpel-report (*a*)." And was particularly ſucceſsful at *Chatham* and *Canterbury*.

He ſpent the winter in *London*, in his uſual buſy and laborious way, and with equal ſucceſs. He was confined, near a fortnight, to his room by a violent fever, and inflammation of the lungs; but before the 17th of *December*, he was able to preach again. And in the latter end of *January* 1751, he rode poſt to *Aſhby*, being alarmed with the accounts of Lady *Huntingdon*'s dangerous illneſs, and the afflictions with which it had pleaſed God to viſit her family. He writes from *Aſhby*, *January* 29. "Bleſſed be God, Lady *Huntingdon* "is ſomewhat better. Entreat all our friends to "pray for her. Her ſiſter-in-law, Lady *Frances* "*H*———, lies dead in the houſe. She was "a retired chriſtian, lived ſilently, and died ſud-"denly, without a groan. May my exit be like "hers. Almoſt all the family have been ſick in "their turns."

Having left *London*, *March* 5, he went again into *Glouceſterſhire*, and to *Briſtol*, and preached at *Taunton* and *Wellington* in his way to *Plymouth*. *April* 11. he was at *Exeter*, and writes thus to Mr. *Hervey*: "Some good, I truſt, is to be done,

(*a*) Letter DCCCLXVIII.

"this

" this ſpring, to many ſouls. This weſtern cir-
" cuit, I believe, has been bleſſed already. I
" have preached about forty times ſince I left
" *London*, and have been enabled ſeveral times
" to ride forty miles a day. I find this ſenſibly
" refreſhes me. I wiſh you could ſay ſo too.
" At *Plymouth* we had ſweet ſeaſons; and on
" *Tueſday* laſt I met with a young clergyman,
" who was awakened under my preaching ſeven
" years ago. He has been at *Cambridge*, and was
" ordained by the Biſhop of *Exeter*. He is fol-
" lowed much, and, I ſuppoſe, will ſoon be re-
" proached for his Maſter's ſake. I hope you
" find ſtrength to proceed in your book."

From *Exeter* he ſet out on a tour through *Wales*, where, in about three weeks, he rode near five hundred miles, and preached generally twice a day; and from hence, he made his viſit to *Ireland*, which had been in his thoughts ſome time.

CHAP.

CHAP. XV.

From his first Visit to Ireland, *to his opening the New Tabernacle at* London, *in the Year 1753.*

AFTER a passage of five days from *Wales*, he arrived *May* 24, 1751, at *Dublin*, where he was gladly received, and lodged at the house of Mr. *L*——, and preached every morning and evening as usual in other places: "Surely (says "he) here are many converted souls, among "whom are two or three students, and several "soldiers. At first *(z)* the greatness and hurry "of the place surprized me; but thanks be to "the Lord of the harvest, here as well as else-"where, the fields are white, ready unto harvest. "Congregations are large, and hear as for eter-"nity." And again: "*Athlone*, *June* 10. For "this week past, I have been preaching twice "almost every day in some country towns. I "find, through the many offences that have lately "been given, matters were brought to a low "ebb. But the cry now is, 'Methodism is re-"vived again *(a)*." At *Limerick* he preached seven times to large and affected auditories; and twice

(z) Letter DCCCXCI, DCCCXCII.

(a) In the MSS. he says, "I took a journey from "near *Haverford West* to *Ireland*, where a yet greater work

twice at *Cork* (where the Methodiſts had lately been mobbed) to a great body of people, with all quietneſs. From thence he went to *Bandon* and *Kinſale*, where a like bleſſing attended his preaching. At his return to *Cork*, the numbers and affections of his hearers increaſed. At *Belfaſt* alſo he was detained ſome days beyond his intention, by the people's importunity, and preached at *Liſburn*, *Lurgun*, the *Maize*, and *Lambag*, towns and places adjacent. So many attended, and the proſpect of doing good was ſo promiſing, that he was ſorry he had not come to the north of *Ireland* ſooner. But he haſted to pay another viſit to *Scotland*, before he embarked for *America*, which he was intent upon doing before winter.

He therefore came over in the beginning of *July* 1751, from *Belfaſt* to *Irvine*, where at the deſire of the magiſtrates he preached to a great congregation; and ſo proceeded to *Glaſgow*. From this place he writes, July 12. "Though I "preached near eighty times in *Ireland*, and God "was pleaſed to bleſs his word, yet *Scotland* ſeems "to be a new world to me. To ſee the people "bring ſo many Bibles, turn to every paſſage "when I am expounding, and hanging, as it "were, upon me to hear every word, is very "encouraging. I feel an uncommon freedom "here; and talking with the winter as well as

"work had been begun and carried on to a high degree, "amidſt prodigious oppoſition; numbers converted, "not only from popery, but to *Jeſus Chriſt*, at *Athlone*, "*Dublin*, *Limerick*, *Cork*, and various other places."

"with

" with the ſummer ſaints, feeds and delights my " heart (*b*)." At this time he was glad to underſtand

(*b*) Here it may be proper, once for all, to take notice of ſome particulars relating to Mr. *Whitefield*'s viſits to *Scotland*, which he continued till within a few years of his death.

Though after the years 1741, and 1742, there was no ſuch extenſive new awakenings, Mr. *Whitefield*'s coming was always refreſhing to ſerious perſons, and ſeemed to put new life into them: and alſo to be the means of increaſing their number. His preaching was ſtill eminently uſeful in various reſpects. In the firſt place, it had an excellent tendency to deſtroy the hurtful ſpirit of bigotry, and exceſſive zeal for ſmaller matters; and to turn men's attention to the great and ſubſtantial things of religion. Another effect was, that it drew ſeveral perſons to hear the goſpel, who ſeldom went to hear it from other miniſters. Again, young people in general were much benefited by his miniſtry, and particularly young ſtudents, who became afterwards ſerious evangelical preachers. Laſtly, his morning diſcourſes, which were moſtly intended for ſincere but diſconſolate ſouls, were peculiarly fitted to direct and encourage all ſuch in the chriſtian life. And his addreſſes in the evening to the promiſcuous multitudes who then attended him, were of a very alarming kind. There was ſomething exceedingly ſtriking in the ſolemnity of his evening-congregations in the Orphan-houſe park at *Edinburgh*, and High-Church-yard of *Glaſgow*; eſpecially towards the concluſion of his ſermons (which were commonly very long, though they ſeemed ſhort to the hearers) when the whole multitude ſtood fixt, and like one man hung upon his lips, with ſilent attention, and many under deep impreſſions of the great objects of religion, and the concerns of eternity. Theſe things will not ſoon be forgotten; and it is hoped, the many good effects, which by the divine bleſſing attended them, never will.

His

ſtand that Mr. *Dinwiddie*, brother-in-law to the Rev. Mr. *MacCulloch* of *Cambuſlang*, was made Governor

His converſation was no leſs reviving than his ſermons. Many in *Edinburgh* and *Glaſgow* are witneſſes of this, eſpecially at *Glaſgow*, when in company with his good friends, Mr. *MacLaurin*, Mr. *Robert Scott*, *&c.* one might challenge the ſons of pleaſure with all their wit, good humour and gaiety to furniſh entertainment ſo agreeable. At the ſame time every part of it was not more agreeable, than it was uſeful and edifying.

His friends in *Scotland*, among whom were many of all ranks, from the higheſt to the loweſt, were very conſtant and ſteady in their great regard for him. And his oppoſers grew more and more mild. Some anonymous pamphlets were written againſt him at his firſt coming: But theſe ſoon died and were forgotten. Afterwards a number of ſtories were handed about to his diſadvantage; but upon enquiry, it was found either that matters were miſrepreſented or exaggerated; or that there was no foundation for ſuch reports at all. In ſhort, when they were traced to their origin, they rather turned out to his honour. He uſed to ſmile at good Mr. *MacLaurin*'s honeſt zeal, who on ſuch occaſions ſpared no pains to come at the truth, and when he had diſcovered it, was no leſs eager to communicate the diſcovery to others, for the vindication of Mr. *Whitefield*'s character, in which he thought the credit of religion was concerned. The following inſtance is well remembered. One Lieutenant *Wright* alledged that Mr. *Whitefield* had kept back money ſent by a gentlewoman to her ſon in *America*. This coming to Mr. *MacLaurin*'s ears, he was reſtleſs till he procured a meeting betwixt Mr. *Whitefield* and his accuſer. They met; Mr. *Wright* did not retract what he had ſaid. Upon which a letter was inſtantly wrote to the mother at *London*; and her anſwer being received, a confutation of the calumny was publiſhed in the *Glaſgow Courant* in the following terms: *October* 31, 1748. "A ſtory having been ſpread in this town of Mr. "*Whitefield*'s having received twenty pounds ſterling

Governor of *Virginia*. In that province there had been a conſiderable awakening for ſome years paſt,

" from a gentlewoman in *London*, to give her ſon in " *Georgia:* whereas he had received only three guineas, " which he had returned to the gentlewoman when he " came back from *Georgia*, her ſon having been gone " from thence before his arrival; a letter was wrote to " *London* to clear up this affair, to which the gentle- " woman has ſent this anſwer: ' Sir, this is to aſſure " you that I received of Mr. *John Stevens* the three gui- " neas, which was the full ſum that I gave you for my " ſon. I hope it is only a falſe aſperſion on him; for I " never heard that he ſhould ſay any ſuch thing, being " three months in *England*. I am, &c. *September* 13, " 1748.'——There is likewiſe a receipt come down, " dated *September* 3, to Mr. *Stevens*. Both the letter " and receipt are to be ſeen in the hands of the pub- " liſher."

But, indeed, Mr. *Whitefield*'s whole behaviour was ſo open to the eyes of the world; and his character, after it had ſtood many attacks from all quarters, came at laſt to be ſo throughly eſtabliſhed, that ſeveral of his oppoſers in *Scotland* ſeemed rather to acquire a certain degree of eſteem for him; at leaſt, they all thought proper to give over ſpeaking againſt him.

When he was at *Glaſgow*, he always lodged with Mr. *James Niven* Merchant above the Croſs; till towards the end of his life, his aſthmatic diſorder made the town air diſagree with him. And then he went out in the evenings, and ſtayed with his good friend Mr. *MacCulloch* at *Cambuſlang*.

A perſon of eminence, whom a ſincere eſteem of Mr. *Whitefield* made attentive to his reception and miniſtrations in *Scotland*, from firſt to laſt; writes thus to the compiler:

Edinburgh, *January* 1772. " I think more might be " ſaid with great juſtice, concerning the effects of his " miniſtry in *Scotland*, after the firſt two years; as there " was always a remarkable revival followed each of his " viſits; which many of the miniſters teſtified from their

paſt, eſpecially in *Hanover* county and the places adjacent. As the miniſters of the eſtabliſhment did not favour the work, and the people had put themſelves under the care of the *New York* ſynod, they met with diſcouragements from thoſe in power. However, Mr. *Samuel Davies* (afterwards preſident of the college of *New Jerſey)* being licenſed, was ſettled over a congregation; and the religious concern ſo increaſed, that one congregation was multiplied to ſeven. There was now an agreeable proſpect that theſe good people would have the ſame privileges ſecured to them, which diſſenting proteſtants enjoy at home *(c)*.

Auguſt 6. he ſet out from *Edinburgh* for *London*, in order to embark a fourth time for *America*. He had thrown up much blood in *Edinburgh*; but the journey he was now upon had a good effect in recovering him from that illneſs: and as he went along, he was much refreſhed with the accounts he received of the happy fruits of his miniſtry at

" particular knowledge, eſpecially by the number of " new communicants.—Mention might be made of the " great number of miniſters in *Scotland*, that employed " him, and of the many affectionate letters he received " from them, of which there were a good many printed " both in the *London* and *Glaſgow* Weekly Hiſtories, " from ſome of the moſt eminent men in the Church, " who had employed him to preach in their pulpits, and " continued ſo to do, when opportunity offered; ex- " cept in the Preſbytery of *Edinburgh*; and even there, " the Magiſtrates always allowed him a Church to " preach in, every time he came."

(*c*) Letter DCCCCI.

Kendal the year before. After a ſorrowful parting with his friends in *England*, which grew ſtill more diſtreſſing to him, he went aboard the *Antelope*, Captain *MacLellan*, bound for *Georgia* with *Germans*; and took along with him ſeveral children.

He arrived at *Savannah*, *October* 27, and found the Orphan-houſe in a flouriſhing condition. "Thanks be to God, (ſays he) all is well at *Be-*"*theſda.* A moſt excellent tract of land is "granted to me very near the houſe, which in a "few years, I hope, will make a ſufficient pro-"viſion for it (*d*)." From *November* 1751, to the beginning of *April* 1752, he was partly at *Bethefda*, and partly in *South Carolina*, ſtill upon the ſtretch in his Maſter's work. "I intend, (ſays "he) by his aſſiſtance, now to begin; for as yet, "alas! I have done nothing." And again, "O "that I may begin to be in earneſt! It is a new "year; God quicken my tardy pace, and help "me to do much work in a little time! this is "my higheſt ambition (*e*)."

Being warned by what had happened to him formerly, he did not venture to ſtay the ſummer ſeaſon in *America*; but took his paſſage in the end of *April* for *London*. At his arrival, he perceived he had returned in a very good time; for *Georgia* was ſoon to be taken into the hands of Government, and put on the ſame footing with

(*d*) Letter DCCCCXII.

(*e*) Letter DCCCCX, DCCCCXI.

other

other colonies, which gave ground to hope that it would ſoon become a flouriſhing province. This was joyful news. He now thought providence was appearing for *Georgia* and *Bethesda*. He determined therefore to ſell his plantation, and to carry all his ſtrength to the Orphan-houſe.

About the middle of *June*, he planned a new rout. "Next week, (ſays he) God willing, I ſhall "go to *Portſmouth*, from thence to *Bath*, then to "the weſt, then to *Wales*, and from thence, may "be, to *(f) Scotland* and *Ireland*." Accordingly we find his letters of this period, dated at *Portſmouth*, *Briſtol*, *Cardiff*, *Haverford-weſt*. In returning to *Briſtol*, he attended an aſſociation, where were preſent about nine clergy, and near forty other labourers, of whom he writes *(g)*: "I truſt all are born of God, and deſirous to pro-"mote his glory, and his people's good. All was "harmony and love."

Auguſt 17. he was in *London*. His letter of this date to his acquaintance Dr. *F*——, the celebrated electrical philoſopher, deſerves particular notice. "I find you grow more and more fa-"mous in the learned world. As you have made "a pretty conſiderable progreſs in the myſteries "of electricity, I would now humbly recommend "to your diligent unprejudiced purſuit and ſtudy, "the myſtery of the new birth. It is a moſt im-

(f) Letter DCCCCXVII.

(g) Letter DCCCCXXV.

" portant, intereſting ſtudy, and when maſtered, " will richly anſwer and repay you for all your " pains. One at whoſe bar we are ſhortly to ap- " pear, hath ſolemnly declared, that without it, " we cannot enter the kingdom of heaven. You " will excuſe this freedom. I muſt have *aliquid* " *Chriſti* in all my letters (*h*)."

From *London* he took another tour to *Edinburgh*, where he arrived in the beginning of *September* 1752. In his way he preached twice at *Lutterworth* (the famous *John Wickliff*'s pariſh) and at *Leiceſter*; and in both places was informed afterwards that good was done. At *Newcaſtle*, he was as it were arreſted to ſtay, and preached four times to great congregations.

At *Edinburgh* and *Glaſgow* (in which places he continued till the 10th of October) he was employed as uſual. He writes from *Glaſgow*, *September* 29. " At *Edinburgh* great multitudes, " among whom were abundance of the better " ſort, attended twice every day. Many young " miniſters and ſtudents have given cloſe atten- " dance, and I hear of ſeveral perſons that have " been brought under deep convictions. I in- " tend to ſend you copies of two letters from a " *Highland* ſchoolmaſter, who is honoured of God " to do much good among the poor *Highland* " children (*i*)." " I have brave news ſent

(*h*) Letter DCCCCXXVI.

(*i*) Letter DCCCCXXXI.

" me

" me from *Leiceſter* and *Newcaſtle*, and have " ſtrong invitations to *Yorkſhire* and *Lancaſhire*. " What a pity it is that the year goes round ſo " ſoon (*k*)."

In his way back to *London*, he preached at *Berwick*, *Alnwick*, *Morpeth*, *Newcaſtle*. From *Sheffield* he writes, *November* 1. " Since I left *New-* " *caſtle*, I have ſcarce known ſometimes, whether " I have been in heaven or on earth. At *Leeds*, " *Burſtall*, *Howarth*, *Halifax*, *&c.* thouſands and " thouſands have flocked twice or thrice a-day " to hear the word of life. I am now come from " *Bolton*, *Mancheſter*, *Stockport*, and *Chinly*. Yeſ- " terday I preached in a Church. Four or- " dained miniſters, friends to the work of God, " have been with me. The word hath run ſo " ſwiftly at *Leeds*, that friends are come to fetch " me back, and I am now going to *Rotheram*, " *Wakefield*, *Leeds*, *York*, and *Epworth*. God fa- " vours us with weather, and I would fain make

(*k*) In 1752, the general aſſembly of the Church of *Scotland*, upon a diviſion of the houſe, by a few votes depoſed Mr. *Gilleſpie*; which afterwards gave occaſion to the ſociety called the *Preſbytery of Relief*. Mr. *Whitefield* being informed of the circumſtances of that affair, writes thus (Letter DCCCCXIV.) " I wiſh Mr. *Gil-* " *leſpie* joy. The Pope I find has turned Preſbyterian— " The Lord reigns, that is enough for us." And again (Letter DCCCCXX.) " Now will Mr. *Gilleſpie* " do more good in a week, than before, in a year. " How blind is *Satan!* What does he get by caſting " out *Chriſt*'s ſervants? I expect that ſome great good " will come out of theſe confuſions."

" hay whilſt the ſun ſhines.—O that I had as " many tongues, as there are hairs upon my " head! the ever-loving, ever-lovely *Jeſus* ſhould " have them all. Fain would I die preach- " ing *(l)*."

November 10. he arrived at *London*, and proceeded in his uſual way at the Tabernacle. *December* 15, he ſays, " My hands are full of work; " and I truſt I can ſay, the Lord cauſes his work " to proſper in my unworthy hands. More bleſ- " ſed ſeaſons we never enjoyed. Our ſacramental " occaſions have been exceedingly awful and re- " freſhing."

He now began to think of erecting a new Tabernacle, a large building eighty foot ſquare; which he accompliſhed in the ſpring and ſummer following.

About this time alſo, we find Mr. *Hervey* and him employed in reviſing each others manuſcripts. Of Mr. *Hervey*'s he ſays. " For me to play the " critic on them, would be like holding up a " candle to the ſun. However, I will juſt mark " a few places, as you deſire. I foretell their " fate; nothing but your ſcenery can ſcreen you. " Self will never bear to die, though ſlain in ſo " genteel a manner, without ſhewing ſome reſent- " ment againſt its artful murderer." Again, *(m)* " I thank you a thouſand times for the trouble

(l) Letter DCCCCXXXV, DCCCCXXXVI.

(m) Letter DCCCCXV, DCCCCLXIII.

" you

" you have been at in reviſing my poor compoſi-
" tions, which I am afraid you have not treated
" with a becoming ſeverity. How many pardons
" ſhall I aſk for mangling, and I fear murdering
" your *Theron* and *Aſpaſio*. If you think my two
" ſermons will do for the public, pray return
" them immediately. I have nothing to comfort
" me but this, that the Lord chuſes the weak
" things of this world to confound the ſtrong,
" and things that are not, to bring to nought
" things that are. I write for the poor, you for
" the polite and noble; God will aſſuredly own
" and bleſs what you write."

He was much affected about this time with the death of one Mr. *Steward*, a Miniſter that began to be popular in the church, but ſoon entered into his reſt. " When I met the workmen
" to contract about the building, I could ſcarce
" bear to think of building Tabernacles. Strange!
" that ſo many ſhould be ſo ſoon diſcharged, and
" we continued. Mr. *Steward* ſpoke for his
" Lord, as long as he could ſpeak at all. He
" had no clouds nor darkneſs. I was with him
" till a few minutes before he ſlept in *Jeſus* (*n*)."

March 1, 1753. he laid the foundation of the new Tabernacle, and preached from *Exod.* xx. 24. During the building thereof, he preached in *Moorfields*, *Spittalfields*, and other places in *London*, and made excurſions to *Chatham*, *Sheerneſs*, and *Braintree*.

(*n*) Letter DCCCCLXVIII.

In

In the month of *April*, he went to *Norwich* for a few days, preaching twice a day to thouſands, who attended with the greateſt eagerneſs. At his evening ſermons, ſome rude people made oppoſition, but without effect. At this time alſo he publiſhed his Expoſtulatory Letter to Count *Zinzendoff*, which is in the 4th vol. of his works.

In *May* he made another excurſion to *Narboth*, *Pembroke*, *Haverford-weſt*, *&c.* where congregations were large, and a gracious melting ſeemed to be among the people. Within little more than a fortnight he rode three hundred and fifty miles, and preached above twenty times *(o)*.

Sunday June 10, 1753. he opened his new Tabernacle, preaching in the morning from 1 *Kings* viii. 11, and in the evening from 1 *Chron.* xxix. 9.

(n) Letter DCCCCLXXVI.

CHAP.

CHAP. XVI.

From his opening the New Tabernacle in Moorfields, *to his preaching at the Chapel in* Tottenham-Court Road 1756.

MR. *Whitefield* having preached in *London* at his Tabernacle for a few days with his uſual fervor and ſucceſs, and to large congregations, in the end of the month of *June*, ſet out towards *Scotland*. In his way he had deſirable meetings at *Oulney* and *Northampton*. He preached alſo at *Leiceſter*, and *Nottingham*, where a great multitude came to hear, and at *Sheffield*. In his way to *Leeds*, next morning, he preached at *Rotheram* and *Wakefield*. At the former place he had been diſturbed twice or thrice, and was almoſt determined to preach there no more. But he *(a)* found this would have been a raſh determination; for ſome who had been bitter perſecutors, now received him gladly into their houſe, and owned that God had made him inſtrumental in their converſion. At *Leeds* he had great ſucceſs. At *York* alſo he preached four times. Twice they were diſturbed, and twice had very agreeable ſea-

(a) Letter DCCCCLXXXIV.

ſons.

ſons. At *Newcaſtle* he preached ſeven times, and once at *Sunderland* to great multitudes who were deeply impreſſed. At five in the morning the great room was filled, and on the Lord's day, the congregation without was exceeding large. In ſhort, the proſpect all around was ſo promiſing, that he almoſt repented of his engagement to go to *Scotland*, and reſolved to come back as ſoon as poſſible.

He proceeded however, according to his promiſe, and having ſpent ſome days at *Edinburgh* and *Glaſgow* in his uſual laborious and earneſt manner, and with uſual acceptance, he returned to *England Auguſt* 7. *(b)*.

All

(b) After he had been in *Glaſgow*, the following paragraph appeared in the *Newcaſtle* Journal *Auguſt* 11, 1753. "By a Letter from *Edinburgh* we are informed, that on "the ſecond inſtant Mr. *Whitefield*, the Itinerant, being "at *Glaſgow*, and preaching to a numerous audience "near the Play-houſe lately built, he inflamed the mob "ſo much againſt it, that they ran directly from before "him, and pulled it down to the ground. Several of "the rioters are ſince taken up, and committed to "goal."

It would not have been worth while to tranſcribe this, were it not another ſpecimen of the unaccountable liberties taken by ſome of the oppoſers of Mr. *Whitefield*, in telling their ſtories concerning him. The fact was this. Mr. *Whitefield* being informed that the Players had lately come to *Glaſgow*, and had met with ſome encouragement, took occaſion in his ſermons to preach againſt Play-houſes, and to repreſent their pernicious influence on religion and morality, eſpecially in a populous, commercial city, and the ſeat of a Univerſity. But there was no riot. It was the proprietor of the Play-houſe (at that

All this time he preached twice or thrice a day, and once five times. This he found rather too much for his ſtrength. But he ſtill went on, often expreſſing his deſires and hopes ſoon to ſee his Divine Maſter in Glory.

On his return to *England*, he went from *Newcaſtle* to *Stockton*, *Oſmotherly*, *York* and *Leeds*. He aſſiſted at the ſacrament at *Howarth*, where they had a very extraordinary ſeaſon, and a vaſt number of communicants. He went as far as *Bolton*, *Mancheſter*, and *Stockport*. The more he preached, the more eager the people ſeemed to be. The laſt part of his circuit was to *Lincolnſhire*, *Rotheram*, *Sheffield*, *Nottingham*, and *Northampton*. He returned to *London* in the latter end of *September*, having travelled about twelve hundred miles, and preached a hundred and eighty times to many thouſands *(c)*.

His ſtay in *London* was but ſhort, for in the month of *October* he took another tour to *Staffordſhire*. A new ſcene of uſefulneſs ſeemed to open to him, while he preached at *Oulney*, at *Oxen* near *Harborough*, *Boſworth*, *Kettering* and *Bedford*; at all which places he preached in one week. At *Birmingham* alſo, and ſeveral adjacent places, the people flocked to hear the goſpel. At a place near *Dudley*, called *Guarnall*, he was informed of a

that time a ſlight temporary booth ſupported by the old walls of the Biſhop's Caſtle) who ordered his workmen to take it down.

(c) Letter DCCCCXCII.

whole

whole company that were awakened by reading his ſermons *(d)*. He met with others awakened years ago, and heard of a notorious perſecutor and drunkard, who had been powerfully ſtruck. He loved to break up new ground, as he expreſſes it; and had the pleaſure to find ſometimes that his way was prepared by the bleſſing which God had given to his writings, particularly at *Alperam* in *Cheſhire*, and at *Liverpool*, where a perſon that had received benefit by reading his ſermons, met him at landing, and took him to his houſe. All was quiet here, and at *Cheſter*, where he preached four times, and had ſeveral of the clergy in his congregations. But, at *Wrexham* and *Nantwich* (where a Methodiſt meeting-houſe had lately been pulled down) he was diſturbed by the mob, and forced to remove his congregation to a place a little out of town *(e)*.

Thus he went on, returning at times for a few days to *London*. And *November* 16, writes from *Glouceſter*, "After Lord's day, I am bound for "*Briſtol* and *Plymouth*, and hope to get into my "winter quarters ſome time before *Chriſtmas*. "Glad ſhould I be to travel for *Jeſus* all the year "round. It is more to me than my neceſſary "food *(f)*."

(*d*) Letter DCCCCXCVI.

(*e*) Letter DCCCCXCVII.

(*f*) Letter DCCCCXCIX.

On

On *Sunday*, *November* 25. he opened the new Tabernacle at *Briſtol*, which he obſerves "was "large, but not half large enough; for if the "place could contain them, near as many would "attend as in *London*." He alſo preached twice, in his brother's great houſe to the quality. Though it was ſo late in the year, he ſet out for *Somerſetſhire*, and preached ſeveral times in the open air, at ſeven o'clock at night. "My hands and body, "(ſays he) were pierced with cold; but what are "outward things, when the ſoul within is warmed "with the love of God? The ſtars ſhone exceed-"ing bright: by an eye of faith, I ſaw Him who "calleth them all by their names. My ſoul "was filled with a holy ambition, and I longed "to be one of thoſe who ſhall ſhine as the ſtars "for ever and ever *(g)*." At this time his friend and fellow-labourer, the Rev. Mr. *John Weſley*, had by his extraordinary labours brought his life into great danger, of which Mr. *Whitefield* thus writes, *(h) Briſtol*, *December* 3, 1753. "I am now haſ-"tening to *London* to pay my laſt reſpects to my "dying friend. The phyſicians think his diſeaſe "is a galloping conſumption. I pity the church, "I pity myſelf, but not him. Poor Mr. *Charles* "will now have double work. But we can do all "things through *Chriſt* ſtrengthening us!" His Letters to both the brothers on this occaſion are very affectionate and ſympathizing *(i)*. And he ſoon had

(g) Letter MIV, MV. *(h)* Letter MV.
(i) Letter MVI, VII, and VIII.

the

the pleaſure of ſeeing Mr. *Weſley* recover. *December* 26, he had a viſit from Meſſieurs *Tennent* and *Davies* from *America*, who came over to procure contributions for the College of *New Jerſey*. As they were commiſſioned to apply for a general collection in *Scotland*, he gave them recommendatory letters, and heartily endeavoured to promote their deſign. He ſtayed in *London* all the winter of 1753, *(k)* longing for a ſpring campaign (as he expreſſes it) that he might begin to do ſomething for his divine maſter.

March 7, 1754. having got twenty-two poor deſtitute children under his care, he embarked with them for *America*, by way of *Liſbon*, where he ſtayed from the 20th of *March*, to the 13th of *April*.

From *Liſbon* he writes *(l)*: " The air agrees " with my poor conſtitution extremely, and " through divine aſſiſtance, I hope what I ſee will " alſo much improve my better part, and help to " qualify me better for preaching the everlaſting " goſpel: again a gentleman hath moſt gladly

(*k*) His letters written about the beginning of the new year, ſhew the habitual frame of his mind. " Near " forty years old, and ſuch a dwarf! The winter come " already, and ſo little done in the ſummer." Again, " I heartily wiſh your Lordſhip, not the compliments " but the bleſſings of the ſeaſon; even all thoſe bleſ- " ſings that have been purchaſed for a loſt world, by " the death and ſufferings of an incarnate GOD." Letter MXV, MXVI.

(*l*) Letter MXXIX.

" received me into his houſe, and behaves like a " friend indeed. To day I dine with the Conſul. " Every day I have ſeen or heard ſomething, that " hath had a native tendency to make me thankful " for the glorious reformation (*m*)." After a ſight of ſome popiſh proceſſions, which were new and very ſtriking to him, he ſays, " I returned to my " lodgings not a little affected, to ſee ſo many " thouſands led away from the ſimplicity of the " goſpel, by ſuch a mixture of human artifice and " blind ſuperſtition, of which, indeed, I could " have formed no idea, had I not been an eye-" witneſs (*n*)." He was ſtill more ſhocked at the proceſſion of *St. Francis*; and moſt of all at the ſight of near two hundred penitents paſſing along the ſtreets in a moon-ſhine night, dragging along heavy chains faſtened to their ancles, which made a diſmal rattling, moſt of whom whipped and laſhed themſelves with cords, and with flat bits of iron; and ſome of them ſtruck ſo hard, that their backs were quite red, and very much ſwelled. He wrote a deſcription of this to his friend (*o*), with expreſſions of praiſe and gratitude to Providence for the great wonder of the Reformation, and for delivering *Britain* from the return of ſuch ſpiritual ſlavery, by defeating the unnatural rebellion. " Bleſſed be God, (ſays he) the ſnare is " broken, and we are delivered. O for Proteſ-

(*m*) Letter MXXX, MXXXII.

(*n*) Letter MXXXV. (*o*) Letter MXXXVI.

" tant practices to be added to Protestant prin-
" ciples." He further observes, " The preachers
" here have also taught me something; their ac-
" tion is graceful, *Vividi oculi*, *vividæ manus*, *om-*
" *nia vivida*. Surely our English preachers
" would do well, to be a little more fervent in
" their address. They have truth on their side;
" why should superstition and falshood run away
" with all that is pathetic and affecting *(p)*?"
His two last Letters from *Lisbon (q)* contain a long and lively description of the superstitious farces which he saw acted on *Holy Thursday* as they call it, and *Good Friday*; which he concludes with very serious reflexions, and expressions of pity towards the poor deluded people, who are not allowed to examine matters by the word of God.

After a passage of six weeks from *Lisbon*, he arrived at *Beaufort* in *South Carolina*, *May* 27. with his Orphan charge, all quite well. Having settled them in his family in *Georgia*, which now consisted of above a hundred, and spent some time in *Carolina*, he took a journey to the northward. " At *Charles Town* (says he) and other
" parts of *Carolina* my poor labours have met with
" the usual acceptance, and I have reason to hope
" a Clergyman hath been brought under very
" serious impressions. My health is wonderfully
" preserved. My wonted vomitings have left
" me, and though I ride whole nights, and have

(p) Letter MXXXVII. *(q)* Letter MXL, MXLI.

" been frequently expoſed to great thunders, vio-
" lent lightnings, and heavy rains, yet I am ra-
" ther better than uſual, and as far as I can
" judge, am not yet to die. O that I may at
" length learn to begin to live. I am aſhamed of
" my ſloth and lukewarmneſs, and long to be on
" the ſtretch for God (†)." He arrived at *New York* by water *July* 27, and preached backwards and forwards from *New York* to *Philadelphia*, and *Whitely Creek*, till the middle of *September*. " Every
" where, he obſerves, a divine power accompa-
" nied the word, prejudices were removed, and a
" more effectual door opened than ever, for
" preaching the goſpel (*r*)." The latter end of *September*, he had once more the pleaſure of ſeeing his good old friend Governor *Belchier* at *Elizabeth Town (New Jerſey.)* And it being the *New Jerſey* commencement, the Preſident and the Truſtees preſented Mr. *Whitefield* with the degree of A. M. The meeting of the ſynod ſucceeded, before whom he preached ſeveral times, and had much ſatisfaction in their company. " To-mor-
" row (ſays he) *October* 1, God willing, I ſhall
" ſet out with the worthy Preſident (Mr. *Burr)*
" for *New England*, and expect to return back to
" the Orphan-houſe, through *Virginia*. This will
" be about a two thouſand mile circuit; but the
" Redeemer's ſtrength will be more than ſuffi-
" cient." He had alſo ſome thoughts of going

(†) Letter MXLVIII. (*r*) Letter MLX.

to the *Weſt Indies*, had it been practicable, before his return to *England (s)*.

He arrived with Preſident *Burr* at *Boſton*, *October* 9, and preached there a week with great acceptance. "At *Rhode Iſland* and *Boſton* (ſays he) "ſouls fly to the goſpel, like doves to the win-"dows. Oppoſition ſeems to fall daily." When he was at *Boſton*, he heard to his great joy that a Governor was at length nominated for *Georgia*, and that his friend Mr. *Haberſham* was made ſecretary; to whom he writes, "May the King of "kings enable you to diſcharge your truſt, as "becomes a good patriot, ſubject, and chriſ-"tian *(t)*!" At this time, he went as far north as *Portſmouth (New Hampſhire)* preaching always twice, and ſometimes thrice a day: his reception at *Boſton* was more favourable than that fourteen years before; and in general his labours ſeemed to be attended with as great a bleſſing as ever *(u)*. He took leave of the *Boſton* people at four in the morning, *November* 7, and went to *Rhode Iſland*; from thence through *Maryland* (*x*) and *Virginia*, where the proſpect of doing good was ſo promiſing, that he was ſorry he had not come ſooner. Many came forty or fifty miles to hear him; and

(*s*) Letter MLXI. (*t*) Letter MLXII, MLXIV.

(*u*) Letter MLXVIII.

(*x*) "At length I have got into *Maryland*, and into "a family, out of which, I truſt, five have been born of GOD." Letter MLXX.

a ſpirit

a ſpirit of conviction and conſolation ſeemed to run through all the aſſemblies. Three churches were opened to him. Prejudices ſubſided; ſome of the rich and great began to think favourably of his miniſtrations; and ſeveral of the lower claſs came to him, and acknowledged what God had done for them by his preaching, when there before *(y)*.

In the month of *February* 1755, he got back to *Charles-Town*, and from thence went to *Savannah*; continuing in theſe places till the latter end of *March*, when he embarked for *England*. And on the 8th of *May*, arrived at *Newhaven* in *Suſſex (z)*.

The firſt thing he took notice of, was the ſucceſs of the goſpel in his native country: "Glory "be to the great head of the Church! the word "hath ſtill free courſe. The poor deſpiſed Me- "thodiſts are as lively as ever; and in ſeveral "churches, the goſpel is now preached with "power. Many in *Oxford* are awakened to the "knowledge of the truth, and I have heard al- "moſt every week of ſome freſh Miniſter or ano- "ther, that ſeems determined to know nothing "but *Jeſus Chriſt*, and him crucified *(a)*." This

(y) Letter MLXXI, MLXXIV.

(z) Letter MLXXVII.

(a) Letter MLXXXI, MLXXXII. In the *M. S.* he puts down the names of *Jones*, *Romaine*, *Madan:* of whom it appears he intended to have written more particularly.

conſideration ſeems to have reanimated him. He went on preaching earneſtly at *London*, *Briſtol*, *Bath*, and in *Glouceſterſhire*, till the month of *Auguſt*. Then he went to *Norwich*, and opened the Tabernacle there. "At this laſt place (ſays "he) notwithſtanding offences have come, there "has been a glorious work begun, and is now "carrying on, (*Auguſt* 30, 1755.) The polite "and great ſeem to hear with much attention, "and I ſcarce ever preached a week together with "greater freedom (*b*)."

After this he went his northern circuit, and found reaſon to bleſs God for giving countenance to his labours all the way; particularly, at *Northampton*, *Liverpool*, *Bolton*, *Manchester*, *Leeds*, *Bradford*, and *York* (*c*). But when he had been ſome days at *Newcaſtle*, he found it too late to go to *Ireland*, (as he once propoſed) or even to *Scotland*: He returned therefore to *London*, *October* 30, after preaching twice and thrice a day for two months, to many thouſands. At this time, he ſays, "Next "to *Jeſus*, my King and Country were upon my "heart. I hope, I ſhall always think it my "bounden duty, next to inviting ſinners to the "bleſſed *Jeſus*, to exhort my hearers to exert "themſelves againſt the firſt approaches of popiſh

(*b*) Letter MXCV.

(*c*) "At *York*, I hope, a fine gentleman was touch-"ed; and ſeveral I find were awakened there, and at "*Newcaſtle*, at my laſt viſit." Letter MCII.

"tyranny,

" tyranny, and arbitrary power (*d*). O that we " may be enabled to watch and pray, againſt all the " opoſition of *Antichriſt* in our hearts; for after " all, there lies the moſt dangerous man of " ſin (*e*)." About the end of *November*, he preached in pain, occaſioned by a ſore throat, which was like to have terminated in an inflammatory quincey. This obliged him, much againſt his will, to be ſilent a few days. As ſoon as the danger ſeemed to be over, he fell to work again (*f*). He was now applied to by many ſerious perſons, to preach twice a week at *Long-acre* Chapel, near the play-houſes. Being informed that the place was licenſed, he complied, and preached there for the firſt time, on *December* 23, 1755; but met with great difficulties. The Biſhop of *B*—— ſent him a prohibition. There was alſo a number of ſoldiers, drummers, and many of the lower ſort of people, hired to diſturb him, by making a noiſe in the neighbouring houſe, or yard, of one Mr. *C*——; and this not once or twice, but every time he preached at that Chapel; being hired by ſub-

(*d*) This refers to the encroachments made by the *French*, upon the Britiſh Colonies in *America*; and their threatening *Great Britain* with an invaſion; which occaſioned a declaration of war againſt *France*, next year.

(*e*) Letter MCIV, MCV.

(*f*) " One Phyſician preſcribed a *perpetual bliſter*; but " I have found *perpetual preaching* to be a better remedy. " When this grand catholicon fails, it is over with " me." Letter MCXIV.

ſcription, and provided with a copper furnace, bells, drums, clappers, *&c.* they made it their buſineſs to raiſe the loudeſt din they poſſibly could, from the moment he began preaching to the end of his ſermon. By which, alſo, mobbers were encouraged to come and riot at the chapel-door, during the time of divine ſervice, and then inſult and abuſe him, and the congregation, after it was over. The Chapel windows, while he was preaching, were repeatedly broken by large ſtones, which ſadly wounded ſome of the hearers. Upon this occaſion, Mr. *Whitefield* wrote ſeveral ſpirited letters to the Biſhop of *B*——, acknowledging, indeed, his Lordſhip's candor, and thanking him for his favourable opinion and good wiſhes; (for the Biſhop had wrote an anſwer to his firſt letter) but, at the ſame time, with great ſtrength of reaſon, and a becoming ſenſe of *Britiſh* liberty, defending his own conduct, and remonſtrating againſt the riotous proceedings of his adverſaries. "Laſt *Tueſday* night, (ſays he) all was huſhed. "And in order to throw off all popular odium, "I gave it as my opinion, that it was owing to "your Lordſhip's kind interpoſition. One Mr. "*C.* and one Mr. *M.* I am informed, are greatly "concerned. I know them not; and I pray the "Lord of all lords never to lay this ill and un-"merited treatment to their charge. If no more "noiſe is made on their part, I aſſure your Lord-"ſhip, no further reſentment ſhall be made on "mine. But, if they perſiſt, I have the au-

"thority

" thority of the Apoſtle on a like occaſion, to " appeal unto *Cæſar*. And thanks be to God, " we have a *Cæſar* to appeal to, whoſe laws will " not ſuffer any of his loyal ſubjects to be uſed " in ſuch an inhuman manner. I have only one " favour to beg of your Lordſhip, that you " would ſend (as they are your Lordſhip's " pariſhioners) to the above gentlemen, and de- " ſire them, henceforward, to deſiſt from ſuch " unchriſtian, (and eſpecially, at this critical junc- " ture) ſuch riotous and dangerous proceedings. " Whether as a Chaplain to a moſt worthy Peereſs, " and a Preſbyter of the Church of *England*, and " a ſteady diſintereſted friend to our preſent hap- " py conſtitution, I have not a right to aſk ſuch " a favour, I leave to your Lordſhip's mature " deliberation *(g)*." In the mean time, his preaching was owned by God: particularly, as to one, who had been a ſubſcriber to hire men to make the noiſe *(h)*.

In the beginning of *February* 1756, he ſent eighty pounds of the collection which he had made at the Tabernacle, on the day of the public faſt, to the ſociety for relieving the poor perſecuted *French* Proteſtants *(i)*.

(*g*) Letter MCXII, MCXVII, MCXIX, MCXX, MCXXII, MCXXIV.

(*h*) Letter MCXVI.

(*i*) Letter MCXVIII. This year, 1756, he publiſhed, " A ſhort Addreſs to Perſons of all Denominations, " occaſioned by the Alarm of an intended Invaſion." Inſerted in Vol. IV. of his Works.

As

As the uproar was ſtill continued at *Long-acre* Chapel, and the facts were ſo flagrant, he was adviſed to proſecute the offenders by law. This being underſtood, his life was threatened. A man came up to him, in the pulpit at the Tabernacle (*k*), and three anonymous letters were ſent him, denouncing, a certain, ſudden, and unavoidable ſtroke, unleſs he deſiſted from preaching, and purſuing the offenders. Judging that others were concerned as well as himſelf, and that it was an affair that had reference to the welfare of civil government, he ſent a copy of one of the letters to the Honourable *Hume C——ll*, begging the favour of his advice; and was adviſed by all means, to put all concerned into the Court of King's-Bench (*l*). The Earl of *Holderneſs*, (one of the ſecretaries of ſtate) to whom he was introduced on this occaſion, received him very courteouſly, and ſeemed to have no objection againſt iſſuing a reward for the diſcovery of the letter-writer. "I find," ſays Mr. *Whitefield*, in his letter to Lady *H——n*, *May* 2, 1756, "that all things happen for the furtherance of "the Goſpel. I ſuppoſe, your Ladyſhip has ſeen "his Majeſty's promiſe of a pardon, to any that "will diſcover the letter-writer; and this brings "the further news of my having taken a piece "of ground, very commodious to build on, not

(*k*) Letter MCXXIX.

(*l*) Letter MCXXVII. MCXXIX.

"far

" far from the *Foundling* Hoſpital. I have open-
" ed the ſubſcription, and through God's bleſſ-
" ing, it hath already amounted to near ſix hun-
" dred pounds. I hope, in a few months, to
" have what hath been long wanted, a place for
" the Goſpel, at the other end of the town.
" This evening, God willing, I venture once
" more to preach at *Long-acre*." The place he here ſpeaks of, is the chapel in *Tottenham-Court-Road*, which he began to build *May* 10, 1756.

After this he ſet out on one of his wonted tours, and having ſpent three weeks in preaching, with uſual ſucceſs, at *Briſtol*, and in *Glouceſterſhire*, at *Bradford*, *Frome*, *Warminſter*, and at *Portſmouth* (*m*), he returned to *London* in the beginning of *June*.

July 27. he writes, " The Goſpel flouriſhes in
" *London*. I am juſt returned from preaching it
at *Sheerneſs*, *Chatham*, and in the camp." Next day he ſet off for *Scotland* (*n*). How he employed his time in his way thither, appears from the following letter. " *Sunderland*, *Auguſt* 14, 1756.
" How ſwiftly doth my precious time fly away!
" It is now a fortnight ſince I came to *Leeds*, in
" and about which, I preached eight days, thrice
" almoſt every day, to thronged and affected
" auditories. On *Sunday* laſt at *Bradford*, in the
" morning, the auditory conſiſted of about ten
" thouſand; at noon, and in the evening at *Bur-
" ſtall*, to near double the number. Though

(*m*) Letter MCXXXIX. (*n*) Letter MCXLV.

" hoarſe,

" hoarſe, I was helped to ſpeak ſo, that all heard.
" Next morning, I took a ſorrowful leave of
" *Leeds*, preached at *Doncaſter* at noon, and at
" *York* the ſame night; on *Wedneſday* at *Wawſtall*,
" about fifty miles off; on *Thurſday*, twice at
" *Yarm*, and laſt night, and this morning here."
All the way he heard of a great concern, ſince he was in theſe parts laſt year.

Upon preſſing invitations from friends in the north, he proceeded to *Edinburgh*, where he arrived *Auguſt* 20. and preached there *(o)* and at *Glaſgow*, as uſual, till *September* 22; about which time he received a meſſage from the new Governor of *Georgia* in *London*, deſiring to ſee and converſe with him before he embarked *(p)*.

In his way to *London*, he again viſited *Leeds*, and went ſome days into good Mr. *G*—— and Mr. *J*——'s round, preaching upon the moun-

(o) " *Edinburgh*, *September* 9, 1756. For near theſe
" three weeks, the Rev. Mr. *Whitefield* hath been preach-
" ing in the Orphan-Hoſpital-Park to very crouded au-
" ditories, twice every day. As he was frequently very
" explicit in opening the miſeries of popiſh tyranny,
" and arbitrary power; and very warm in exhorting
" his hearers to loyalty and courage at home, and in
" ſtirring them up to pray for the ſucceſs of his Majeſ-
" ty's forces, both by ſea and land abroad; we have
" reaſon to believe, that his viſit at this juncture hath
" been particularly uſeful."

Glaſgow Courant.

" *Edinburgh*, *September* 23. On *Tueſday* evening, the
" Rev. Mr. *Whitefield*, after ſermon, made a collection
" for the poor Highlanders, when upwards of ſixty
" pounds *ſterling* was collected." *Ibid*.

(p) Letter MCXLVIII.

tains,

tains to many thouſands. But finding his laſt year's diſorder was like to return, he was obliged to leave off, and came to *London* in the end of *October*; and *November* the 7th, opened his new Chapel in *Tottenham-Court-Road*, preaching from 1 *Cor.* iii. 11. *(q)*

(*q*) Letter MCXLIX. and *M. S.*

CHAP.

CHAP. XVII.

From his opening his Chapel in Tottenham-Court-Road, *to his Arrival in* Edinburgh, *in the Year* 1759.

HIS conſtant work was now preaching about fifteen times a week, which, with a weak appetite, want of reſt *(r)*, and much care lying upon his mind, enfeebled his body exceedingly. "But (ſays he) the joy of the Lord is my "ſtrength, and my greateſt grief is, that I can do "no more for Him, who hath done and ſuffered ſo "much for me *(s)*."

His new Chapel ſucceeded according to his wiſh. On *Sunday* mornings, hundreds went away not being able to get in *(t)*. Some people of diſtinction came, and begged they might have a conſtant ſeat; and he received a very ſerious letter, from a perſon who was brought under concern there, though he came at firſt out of curioſity, to ſee what ſort of place it was *(u)*.

In

(r) "I could enlarge, but it is near ſix in the morn-"ing, and I muſt away to preach." Letter MCLVI.

(s) Letter MCLIII. *(t)* MCLVII.

(u) Letters MCLVI, LVII. "A neighbouring "Doctor calls the place *Whitefield*'s *Soul-traf*. I pray the "friend

In ſpring 1757, he ſet out again on his northern circuit, and came to *Edinburgh* in the month of *May*, when the General Aſſembly of the Church of *Scotland* held their annual meeting. He was much pleaſed with this circumſtance. Many miniſters attended his ſermons, perhaps a hundred at a time. Thereby prejudices were removed, and many of them ſeemed to be deeply affected. About thirty of them, as a token of reſpect, invited him to a public entertainment. The King's Commiſſioner alſo invited him to his table (*x*). Thouſands, among whom were a great many of the beſt rank, daily attended his miniſtrations, and the longer he ſtaid, the more the congregations increaſed (*y*).

From *Edinburgh* he went to *Glaſgow*, where, having preached twice by the way, he arrived

" friend of ſinners, to make it a Soul-trap indeed, " to many wandering creatures." Letter MCLVII. " ——— *S*——, the player, makes always one of " the auditory, and, as I hear, is much impreſſed, " and brings others with him." Letter MCLXIII.

(*x*) Some of the *Scotch* clergy, who were prejudiced againſt Mr. *Whitefield*, took upon them to ſignify to the Commiſſioner, (Lord *C-thc-rt*) by ſome of their friends, that it would be better not to invite Mr. *Whitefield* to his table; and that it would give offence. This overture his Grace received with indignation.

The Earl of *L*—— alſo, who was King's Commiſſioner before Lord *C-thc-rt*, ſhewed particular attentention to Mr. *Whitefield:* And from the time of his firſt coming to *Scotland*, ſhewed a great and conſtant regard for him.

(*y*) Letter MCLXVII.

June

June 8, and continued till the 14th, preaching, as usual, in the High Church-yard, to great multitudes, morning and evening; besides on the Lord's-day, both forenoon and afternoon, in one of the churches of the city. The poor in *Glasgow* being at this time in very mournful circumstances, notwithstanding the various sources of supply, he (with the countenance of the magistrates) made a collection for them, at his sermon on *Monday* evening, which amounted to near sixty pounds. Next day he preached at *Paisley*; and from thence set out for *Ireland*.

His first reception was promising as formerly. Congregations at *Dublin* were very large, and much affected. One of the Bishops told a Nobleman, (who repeated it to Mr. *Whitefield*) that he was glad he was come to rouse the people. All sorts attended, and all sorts seemed to be struck with a religious concern (z). But on *Sunday* afternoon, *July* 3. after preaching in *Oxmantown-green*, (a place frequented by the *Ormond* and Liberty boys, as they call them, who often fight there) he narrowly escaped with his life. It being war time, he took occasion to exhort his hearers, (as was his usual practice) not only to fear God, but to honour the King; and prayed for success to the King of *Prussia*. In the time of sermon and prayer, a few stones were thrown at him, which did no hurt. But when he had done,

(z) Letter MCLXVIII, LXIX.

and

and thought to return home, the way he came, by the Barracks, to his great ſurprize acceſs was denied; and he was obliged to go near half a mile, from one end of the Green to the other, through hundreds of papiſts, *&c.* who finding him unattended, (for a ſoldier, and four preachers who came with him, had fled) threw vollies of ſtones upon him from all quarters, and made him reel backwards and forwards, till he was almoſt breathleſs, and all over a gore of blood *(a)*. At laſt, with great difficulty, he ſtaggered to the door of a miniſter's houſe lying next to the Green, which was kindly opened to him. For a while he continued ſpeechleſs and panting for breath; but his weeping friends having given him ſome cordials, and waſhed his wounds, a coach was procured, in which, amidſt the oaths, imprecations, and threatnings of the popiſh rabble, he got ſafe home; and joined in a hymn of thankſgiving with his friends, by whom, he ſays, "none but ſpectators could form an idea of the affection with which he was received." Next morning he ſet out for *Port Arlington*, "leaving, (ſays he) my perſecutors to his mercy, who of perſecutors has often made preachers. I pray God, I may thus be avenged of them *(b)*."

(*a*) "I received many blows and wounds; one was particularly large, and near my temples. I thought of *Stephen*, and was in hopes, like him, to go off in this bloody triumph, to the immediate preſence of my maſter." Letter MCLXX.

(*b*) Letter MCLXX.

After preaching at *Port Arlington*, *Athlone*, *Limerick*, and *Cork*; in the beginning of *Auguſt* he returned to *England*; and, while the weather permitted, continued to range, (as he expreſſes it) preaching with great earneſtneſs every where. "This ſpiritual hunting, (ſays he) is delightful "ſport, when the heart is in the work *(c)*." At *Plymouth* he had the pleaſure of ſeeing officers, ſoldiers, ſailors, *&c.* attending his ſermons with the utmoſt ſolemnity. In *Exeter* alſo, *Briſtol*, *Glouceſter*, and *Glouceſterſhire*, he had delightful ſeaſons. About the middle of *October* 1757, he returned to *London*.

His attendance this winter on both the Chapel and the Tabernacle, together with his thoughtfulneſs, greatly impaired his health. He was troubled with continual vomitings, got little ſleep, and had no appetite. Still, however, he went on as well as he could. "I am brought, "now *(d)*, (ſays he) to the ſhort allowance of "preaching but once a day, and thrice on a "*Sunday*." But when he was not preaching, he was projecting ſome ſcheme or other for the advancement of religion: for inſtance, the building of alms-houſes for pious widows, on the ground that ſurrounded his Chapel. "I have a plan, "(ſays he) for twelve. The whole expence will "be four hundred pounds. I have got a proſ-"pect of two. I propoſe allowing each widow "half a crown a week. The ſacrament money

(*c*) Letter MCLXXIV. (*d*) Letter MCLXXXVII.

"will

" will more than do. If this be effected, many " godly widows will be provided for, and a ſtand- " ing monument left that the Methodiſts were " not againſt good works *(e)*." It was not long till this plan was put into execution. The foundation of the alms-houſes was laid *February* 16, 1758, and the widows began to be admitted in *June* following.

He began his ſummer-circuit this year at *Glouceſter:* from thence he went to *Briſtol*, and then to *Wales*. When he was in *Wales*, he was brought very low in his health. He was not able to ſit up in company, as he uſed to do; and could take very little food. Yet continued travelling and preaching twice a day, through various towns in *South Wales*, where multitudes attended; on *Sundays* the numbers were almoſt incredible *(f)*.

In the month of *July* he ſet off for *Scotland*. In his way he preached at *Everton*, *St. Neots*, *Kayſo*, *Bedford*, *Oulney*, *Weſton*, *Underwood*, *Ravenſtone*, *Northampton*, and *Newcaſtle*. Four clergymen lent him their pulpits. His bodily ſtrength increaſed ſo little by this journey, that he ſometimes had thoughts of turning back. But this he did not think to be his duty. " Through divine " ſtrength, (ſays he) I hope to go forward, and " ſhall ſtrive, as much as in me lies, to die in " this glorious work *(g)*." Yet it pleaſed God to

(*e*) Letters MCLXXXVII, MCLXXXIX.
(*f*) Letters MCCIII, MCCVI.
(*g*) Letter MCCIX.

reſtore his health in a good meaſure, ſoon after his arrival in *Scotland*. From *Edinburgh* he writes, *Auguſt* 19 and 24. "For theſe four "months laſt paſt, I have been brought ſo ex- "ceeding low in my body, that I was in hopes, "every ſermon I preached would waft me to my "wiſhed for home. *Scotland*, I hoped, would "finiſh my warfare; but it has rather driven me "back to ſea again. On *Tueſday* next, I thought "to have moved; but as it is race-week, and "my health is improving, friends adviſe me to "ſtay, to ſtir them up to run with patience the "race that is ſet before us (*h*)."

Having left *Edinburgh*, *September* 13, he preached in a great many places in the north of *England*, *Alnwick*, *Newcaſtle*, *Durham*, *Biſhop-Aukland*, *Leeds*,

(*h*) "*Edinburgh*, *September* 14, 1758. Mr. *White-* "*field*'s preſence, at this time, has been particularly "uſeful to the Orphan-Hoſpital, for which upwards of "two hundred pounds hath been raiſed from the col- "lection at the doors, and feat-rents. Before he left "*Glaſgow*, he made a collection for the *Glaſgow* Cha- "ritable *Highland* Society, for ſupporting and educating "poor *Highland* children; a ſcheme particularly uſeful "at this time, when ſo many of their parents and "friends are abroad in *America*, in his Majeſty's ſervice. "During his ſtay here, he has had occaſion to preach "three thankſgiving ſermons, for the victory at *Crevelt*, "the taking of *Cape Breton*, and the late defeat of the "*Ruſſians*. By his warm and repeated exhortations to "loyalty, and a ſteady adherence to the proteſtant in- "tereſt, on this, and all other occaſions, it muſt be "acknowledged, even in this view, his viſit here has "been uſeful to the community in a civil, as well as a "religious light." *Glaſgow Courant*.

&c.

&c. and came to *London* about the end of *October*.

He now talked of going over again to *America*, where his affairs were in a good situation: "Bleſſed be God, (ſays he) that I can ſend you "word, a never-failing Providence hath put "it into my power to pay off all *Betheſda*'s "arrears. I am talking every day of coming "over; but how to do it in war-time, or "how to get the Chapel and Tabernacle ſupplied, "I cannot as yet be clear in (*i*)." Not being able, it ſeems, to get over theſe difficulties, he continued all winter 1758 in *London*, and about the middle of *May* 1759, opened his ſpring campaign, at *Briſtol*. In the month of *June* he was in *Glouceſterſhire* and *Yorkſhire*, where people, high and low, rich and poor, flocked, as uſual, to hear him, twice a day (*k*); and from thence re-viſited *Scotland*.

(*i*) Letters MCCXIX, MCCXX.

(*k*) "I am growing fat; but, as I take it to be a "diſeaſe, I hope I ſhall go home the ſooner." Letter MCCXXV.

CHAP. XVIII.

From his Arrival at Edinburgh 1759, *to his opening Lady* Huntingdon's *Chapel at* Bath, *in the Year* 1765.

ABOUT the beginning of *July* 1759, he came to *Edinburgh*. His congregations here and at *Glaſgow* were very large, and very attentive, as formerly *(l)*. But he complains in his letters, "that with reſpect to the power of religion, "it was a dead time in *Scotland* in compariſon "with *London*, and ſeveral other parts of *Eng-* "*land (m)*."

(l) "*Edinburgh*, *Auguſt* 15, 1759. On *Tueſday* "morning the Rev. Mr. *Whitefield* ſet out on his return "for *England* It is ſaid, that here and at *Glaſgow*, within "theſe ſix weeks he has preached near a hundred times, "and yet the congregations were always increaſing. "Whatever this be owing to, every body muſt judge "for themſelves: but it is certain he continually ex- "erted all his rhetoric in ſtirring up a zeal for his God, "his King, and his Country in this time of danger; and "ſeemed particularly pleaſed, as were thouſands more, "that he had an opportunity laſt Lord's Day evening, "of preaching a thankſgiving ſermon to a moſt thronged "auditory, on account of the glorious victory lately "vouchſafed to Prince *Ferdinand* over the *French*.

"The ſum collected for the benefit of the Orphan "Hoſpital, during his ſtay here, amounted to two hun- "dred and fifteen pounds."

(m) Letters MCCXXVI, XXVIII.

His

His visit to *Scotland* this year, gave occasion to a passage, which was much for his honour, and a full confutation of the mercenary motives ascribed to him by some of his adversaries. One Miss *Hunter*, a young lady of considerable fortune, made a full offer to him of her estate, both money and lands, amounting to about seven thousand pounds, which he generously refused. And upon his refusing it for himself, she offered it to him for the benefit of his orphan-house in *Georgia*, which he also absolutely refused. These facts the compiler has from undoubted authority.

He spent the winter *(n)* in *London*, and got his chapel enlarged.

March 14, 1760, he made a collection at his Chapel and Tabernacle, of above four hundred pounds, for the distressed *Prussians*, who had suffered so much from the cruelty of the *Russians*, at *Newmark*, *Costrin*, &c. *(o)*.

In summer 1760, he went into *Gloucestershire* and *Wales*, and from thence to *Bristol*. When he preached at the Tabernacle in *Bristol*, there were more in the evenings than it could well hold; and in the fields his congregations consisted of not less than ten thousand *(p)*.

(n) *October* 1759, he wrote a preface to Mr. *Samuel Clarke*'s Bible. See his Works, Vol. IV.

(o) For this disinterested act of benevolence, it is said, he received the thanks of his *Prussian* majesty.

(p) Letter MCCXXXVII.

He now began to undergo a new kind of perſecution (which however has ſometimes fallen upon men of the greateſt eminence) that of being mimicked and burleſqued upon the ſtage (*q*). His enemies had in vain uſed violence againſt him, and having found that the law would not ſuffer them to proceed in that way, they therefore thought they would try what they could do by mockery. For this purpoſe, they got for their tool one *Samuel Foote*, a mimic, who having had ſome ſucceſs in imitating Mr. *Whitefield*'s perſon, and ſpeaking a few ludicrous ſentences in his manner, was encouraged to proceed farther, and to write a farce (called the *Minor*) to be acted at the Theatre in *Drury-lane* (*r*). This performance is otherwiſe very dull and unintereſting; but by its impiety, it cannot fail of exciting the indignation of the religious and ſober-minded. For, in order to expoſe Mr. *Whitefield* to contempt, the author makes no ſcruple to treat the very expreſſions and ſentiments of the Bible with ridicule; or (to put the moſt fa-

(*q*) The compiler is uncertain as to the time when this was firſt done. Mr. *Whitefield* firſt takes notice of it in his letter dated *Auguſt* 15, 1760. It ſeems to have taken its riſe from the reſentment of the playhouſe people, after they failed in their attempt to freighten him from preaching at *Long-acre* chapel, and were farther exaſperated by ſeeing him erect a chapel of his own in *Tottenham-court-road*.

(*r*) See a Letter to *David Garrick*, Eſq; occaſioned by the intended repreſentation of the *Minor* at *Drury-lane* Theatre, ſaid to be written by the Rev. Mr. *Madan*.

vourable

vourable conſtruction upon the matter) he and thoſe whom he ſent to the Tabernacle and Chapel to procure materials, were ſo little acquainted with the ſacred writings, as not to know, that what they took for Mr. *Whitefield*'s peculiar language, was the language of the word of God *(s)*. Be this

(*s*) Mr. *Foote* being manager of the *Edinburgh* Theatre in winter 1770, the *Minor* was acted there. The firſt night it was pretty throng, as people fond of any novelty were led to it without knowing any thing of the nature of the performance. But (ſuch was the public ſenſe of the impurity and indecency of it when known) that on the ſecond night, only ten women appeared. When it was acted on *Saturday*, *November* 24, a diſpute aroſe among the ſpectators, whether it was proper to bring Mr. *Whitefield* upon the ſtage, as he was now dead? This, however, was done; and raiſed a general indignation in the inhabitants of that city. Next day ſeveral miniſters (the Rev. Dr. *Erſkine*, Dr. *Walker*, &c.) took notice of it in their diſcourſes from the pulpit. Dr. *Walker* (whoſe church is frequented by the people of higher rank) obſerved in his lecture upon 2 *Cor.* v. 14—21, that he could not read the 17th verſe, "If any man be in Chriſt, he is a new "creature," without expreſſing the juſt indignation he felt, upon hearing that laſt night a profane piece of buffoonery was publickly acted, in which this ſacred doctrine is ridiculed.——Mr. *Baine*, of the *Kirk of Relief*, preached a ſermon upon the occaſion, *December* 2, from *Pſalm* xciv. 16, which was publiſhed and ſold off in a few days. Towards the concluſion of the ſermon, he ſays, "How baſe and un-"grateful is ſuch treatment of the dead; and that too "ſo very nigh to a family of orphans, the records of whoſe "hoſpital will tranſmit Mr. *Whitefield*'s name to poſte-"rity with honour, when the memory of others will "rot. How illiberal ſuch uſage of one, whoſe ſeaſon-"able good ſervices for his King and Country are well "known; whoſe indefatigable labours for his beloved "Maſter were countenanced by Heaven."

as

as it may, they loſt their labour, for they were ſo far from leſſening the number of his congregations, that they increaſed them; and brought thouſands of new perſons to hear the goſpel; which was the very thing he always aimed at: and thus Providence gave him the victory over them.

March 14, 1760, he preached at the Chapel from *Hoſ.* xi. 8, 9. and at the Tabernacle in the evening from the 80th Pſalm and laſt Verſe. At the former place he collected two hundred and twenty-two pounds eight ſhillings and nine pence; and at the other, one hundred and eighty-two pounds fifteen ſhillings and nine pence, for the diſtreſſed Proteſtants in *Pruſſia*. No man was a more ſtrict obſerver of public occurrences, or more endeavoured to improve them.

In the months of *September* and *October* 1760, he made a tour through *Yorkſhire*; and was in *London*, during the winter, employed as uſual. On the faſt-day, *Feb.* 13, 1761, he preached early in the morning at the Tabernacle on *Exod.* xxxiv. 1. *&c.* and collected one hundred and twelve pounds; in the forenoon he laboured at the Chapel, and diſcourſed on *Joel* ii. 15. and afterwards collected two hundred and forty-two pounds; and in the evening he preached at the Tabernacle from *Gen.* vii. 1. and collected two hundred and ten pounds. Theſe ſums were immediately applied to the noble purpoſes for which they were collected, the relief of

the

the *German* Proteſtants, and the ſufferers by fire at *Boſton (t)*.

But his health, which had often been very bad *(u)*, now grew worſe and worſe, ſo that in *April* 1761, he was brought to the gates of death. After his recovery, being ſtill exceeding weak, and not able to preach as formerly, he left *London*, and made a viſit to *Briſtol*, *Exeter*, and *Plymouth*, by which he found himſelf ſomewhat better; but could not bear long journies and frequent preaching as he uſed to do *(x)*.

(t) Four hundred pounds were aſſigned to the *Germans*, and given into the hands of the Rev. Mr. *Ziegenhagen*. Letters MCCXLI, XLII, XLVI.

" *Boſton*, *Feb.* 27, 1764. At a meeting of the free-
" holders and other inhabitants of the town of *Boſton* on
" *Friday* laſt, it was voted unanimouſly, that the thanks
" of the town be given to the Rev. Mr. *George White-*
" *field*, for his charitable care and pains in collecting a
" conſiderable ſum of money in *Great Britain*, for the
" diſtreſſed ſufferers by the great fire in *Boſton* 1760; and
" a reſpectable committee was appointed to wait on Mr.
" *Whitefield*, to inform him of the vote, and preſent him
" with a copy thereof." *Boſton Gazette.*

(u) It was happy for him that he frequently got the aſſiſtance of clergymen from the country; and at this time particularly of the Rev. Mr. *Berridge*, late Moderator of *Cambridge*, of whom he writes (Let. MCCXLIII, XLV) " A new inſtrument is raiſed up out of *Cambridge*
" Univerſity. He has been here preaching with great
" flame, and like an angel of the churches indeed."——
The compiler is informed that the Rev. Mr. *Berridge*, at *Everton*, ſtill continues zealous and ſucceſsful.

(x) Letter MCCL.——The MS. (which after the year 1748, contains only very ſhort and imperfect hints) ends here.

October 1761, he complains "I have not preached "ed a ſingle ſermon for ſome weeks. Laſt *Sunday* "I ſpoke a little; but I feel its effects ever ſince. "A ſea voyage ſeems more neceſſary to me now "than ever.——I know now what nervous diſor- "ders are. Bleſſed be God that they were con- "tracted in his ſervice; I do not repent—— "though I am frequently tempted to wiſh the "report of my death had been true, ſince my "diſorder keeps me from my old delightful work "of preaching (*y*)." In a journey to *Leeds* and *Newcaſtle*, this month, he could bear riding in a a poſt-chaiſe, but preached ſeldom, his friends being ſo prudent as not to preſs him to it: "I hope, "however, ſays he, I am travelling in order to "preach (*z*)." Accordingly he prolonged his journey the length of *Edinburgh* and *Glaſgow*, and did not return to *London* till the month of *December*; when he found himſelf conſiderably better, which (under God) he attributed to his following the ſimple preſcriptions of four eminent phyſicians in *Edinburgh*; being ſenſible, as he ſaid, that their advice had been more bleſſed, for his recovery, than all the medicines and directions he had elſewhere (*a*).

As ſoon as his health was in ſome meaſure reſtored, he fell to his beloved work again. From *Briſtol*, *April* 1762, he writes, "*Briſtol* air agrees

(*y*) Letters MCCLII, LIII, LIV.

(*z*) Letter MCCLV. (*a*) Letter MCCLIX.

"with

" with me. I have been enabled to preach five " times, this laſt week, without being hurt. Who " knows but I may yet be reſtored ſo far as to " ſound the Goſpel trumpet for my God? The " quietneſs I enjoy here, with daily riding out, " ſeems to be one very proper means (*b*)." He continued thus to preach four or five times a week, notwithſtanding his weakneſs, till about the middle of *May*; and was ſometimes enabled to " take the field," as he expreſſes it, which gave him great joy; " Mounts," ſays he, " are " the beſt pulpits, and the heavens the beſt " ſounding boards. O for power equal to my " will! I would fly from pole to pole, publiſhing " the everlaſting goſpel of the Son of God (*c*)." When he returned to *London*, the cares and labours that thronged upon him were ready to bring him low again. In the month of *July*, therefore, he made a voyage to *Holland* (*d*), and found himſelf ſo much the better for it, that he writes from *Norwich*, *July* 31, " The expedition to *Holland*, " was, I truſt, profitable to myſelf and others; " and if ever my uſefulneſs is to be continued at " *London*, I muſt be prepared for it by a longer " itineration both by land and water. At preſent, bleſſed be God, I can preach once a day; " and it would do your heart good to ſee what an

(*b*) Letters MCCLX, LXI. (*c*) Letter MCCLXV.

(*d*) He preached at *Rotterdam* four times.

" influence

" influence attends the word. All my old times " are revived again (*e*)."

Auguſt 18, he arrived at *Edinburgh*, made a viſit to *Glaſgow*, where he preached every day (and twice at *Cambuſlang*) and continued preaching once a day at *Edinburgh* till *September* 13, when he returned to *England*: and was glad (now that peace was expected) of the proſpect of embarking ſoon for *America*.

While in *England*, he found that preaching once a day did not hurt him, but dared not venture oftener. At *Leeds*, *Briſtol*, and *Plymouth*, he had very deſirable ſeaſons; but with reſpect to *London*, he ſays, (*f*) " As affairs are circumſtanced, every " thing there tends to weigh me down." Having therefore perſuaded ſome of his intimate friends, as truſtees, to take upon them the whole care of the affairs of his Chapel and Tabernacle, and all his other concerns at home; he reſolved to ſail from *Greenock* in *Scotland*. On his way thither, in the month of *March* 1763, he preached at *Everton*, *Leeds*, *Aberford*, *Kippax*, and *Newcaſtle*; and was alſo employed in writing his obſervations, *&c.* in anſwer to Biſhop *Warburton* (*g*).

When he came to *Scotland*, he continued to preach once a day, for ſome weeks; but being taken ill of his old diſorder at *Edinburgh*, he was obliged to be ſilent (for the moſt part) for near

(*e*) Letter MCCLXVII. (*f*) Letter MCCLXXIV.
(*g*) Letter MCCLXXVIII, LXXIX. See his Works, Vol. IV.

ſix

ſix weeks afterwards. At laſt, in the beginning of *June*, he embarked the ſixth time for *America*, in the ſhip *Fanny*, Captain *Archibald Galbreath*, bound from *Greenock* to *Virginia*: where (after a voyage of twelve weeks) he arrived in the latter end of *Auguſt* (*b*).

His letters in *September*, *October*, and *November* 1763, are dated from *Philadelphia*. He found himſelf ſtill an invalid; yet made a ſhift to preach twice a week. "Here," ſays he, "are ſome young "bright witneſſes riſing up in the church. Per- "haps I have already converſed with forty new- "creature miniſters of various denominations. "Sixteen hopeful ſtudents, I am credibly inform- "ed, were converted at *New-Jerſey* College laſt "year. What an open door, if I had ſtrength! "Laſt *Tueſday* we had a remarkable ſeaſon among "the Lutherans; children and grown people "were much impreſſed (*i*)."

He wanted much to go forward to *Georgia*, but the phyſicians were abſolutely againſt it, till he got more ſtrength. In the latter end of *November* he

(*b*) "—— Thanks to a never failing Redeemer, I "have not been laid by an hour through ſickneſs, ſince "I came on board——A kind captain, and a moſt or- "derly and quiet ſhip's company, who gladly attended "when I had breath to preach. Scarce an oath have I "heard upon deck——and ſuch a ſtillneſs through the "whole ſhip, both on week-days and the Lord's day, "as hath from time to time ſurprized me." Letter MCCXC.

(*i*) Letter MCCXCIV.

ſet

ſet out from *Philadelphia* for *New-York*, and on his way preached ſeveral times at *New-Jerſey* College and *Elizabeth Town*, with much acceptance. His ſpirits now grew better, and he could ſometimes preach thrice a week *(f)*. While he continued at *New-York* during the winter, he writes, "Prejudices in this place have moſt ſtrangely ſubſided. "The better ſort flock as eagerly as the common "people, and are fond of coming for private goſpel-converſation.———Congregations continue "very large, and I truſt ſaving impreſſions are "made upon many *(g)*."

After leaving *New-York*, he preached at *Eaſt-Hampton*, *Bridge-Hampton*, and *South-Hold*, upon

(f) Letter MCCXCVIII.

(g) Letters MCCCII, MCCCIII. "*New-York*, "*January* 23, 1764. The Rev. Mr. *George Whitefield* "has ſpent ſeven weeks with us, preaching twice a "week to more general acceptance than ever; and been "treated with great reſpect by many of the gentlemen "and merchants of this place. During his ſtay, he "preached two charity ſermons; the one on the occaſion of the annual collection for the poor, in which "double the ſum was collected that ever was upon the "like occaſion; the other was for the benefit of Mr. "*Wheelock*'s Indian School at *Lebanon*, in *New-England*, "for which he collected (notwithſtanding the preſent "prejudices of many people againſt the Indians) the ſum "of one hundred and twenty pounds. In his laſt ſermon "he took a very affectionate leave of the people of this "city, who expreſſed great concern at his departure. "May God reſtore this great and good man (in whom "the gentleman, the chriſtian, and accompliſhed orator "ſhine forth with ſuch peculiar luſtre) to a perfect ſtate "of health, and continue him long a bleſſing to the "world, and the church of Chriſt." *Boſton Gazette.*

Long-

Long-Iſland; at *Shelter-Iſland* alſo; and at *New-London*, *Norwich*, and *Providence on the Main Land*. Then proceeded to *Boſton*, where he arrived in the latter end of *February* 1764, and was received with uſual warmth of affection (*b*). But as the ſamll-pox was ſpreading through the town, he choſe to preach for a while in the adjacent places. At *Newbury* a great influence attended his preaching. He writes from *Concord* to his friend Mr. *S*—— *S*——, "How would you have been delighted to have ſeen Mr. *Wheelock*'s Indians? Such a promiſing nurſery of future miſſionaries, I believe, was never ſeen in *New-England* before; pray encourage it with all your might. I alſo wiſh you could give ſome uſeful puritanical books to *Harvard* College Library lately burnt down (*i*)."

(*b*) Letter MCCCIV.

(*i*) Letter MCCCV. Some years after the gentlemen of *Harvard* College expreſſed their gratitude to Mr. *Whitefield* by the following vote. "At a meeting of the Preſident and Fellows of *Harvard* College, *Auguſt* 22, 1768. The Rev. Mr. *George Whitefield* having, in addition to his former kindneſs to *Harvard* College, lately preſented to the Library, a New Edition of his Journals, and having procured large benefactions from ſeveral benevolent and reſpectable gentlemen; VOTED, That the Thanks of the Corporation be given to the Rev. Mr. *Whitefield*, for theſe inſtances of Candour and Generoſity.

PRESENT,

The Preſident,
Mr. *Appleton*,
Mr. Profeſſor *Winthrop*,
Dr. *Eliot*,
Dr. *Cooper*,
Treaſurer *Hubbard*.

A true Copy, *per* *Edward Holyoke*, Preſident.

In the month of *April* he had a return of his diſorder; but it did not long keep him from preaching: and the *Boſton* people were exceedingly eager to hear. He was thinking to proceed immediately ſouthward, but they ſent after him, and perſuaded him to come back. *June* 1, 1764. He writes, "Friends have even conſtrained me to "ſtay here, for fear of running into the ſummer's "heat. Hitherto I find the benefit of it. Whatever it is owing to, through mercy I am much "better in health than I was this time twelve "months, and can now preach thrice a week to "very large auditories, without hurt. And every "day I hear of ſome brought under concern.— "This is all of grace (*k*)."

After a very ſorrowful parting, he left *Boſton*, and came back to *New-York*, from whence his letters are dated from the end of *June* till the latter end of *Auguſt*. "At preſent," ſays he, "my "health is better than uſual, and as yet I have "felt no inconvenience from the ſummer's heat.— "I have preached twice lately in the fields, and "we ſat under the bleſſed Redeemer's ſhadow "with great delight.——My late excurſions upon "*Long-Iſland*, I truſt, have been bleſſed. It "would ſurprize you to ſee above one hundred "carriages at every ſermon, in this new world (*l*).

(*k*) Letter MCCCXI.

(*l*) Letters MCCCXII, MCCCXIII, MCCCXV.

In

In *September* and *October* he was at *Philadelphia*; the provoſt of the college there read prayers for him. Both the preſent and late governor, with the principal gentlemen of the city attended, and thanks were ſent to him from the truſtees, for ſpeaking for the charity-children, and countenancing the inſtitution (*m*).

From *Philadelphia* he proceeded ſouthward thro' *Virginia*. And *November* 22, at *New-Brunſwick* in *Carolina*, he writes, "At *Newburn* laſt *Sunday*, good "impreſſions were made.—From that place to this "I have met with what they call New-Lights (*n*) "almoſt every ſtage.—I have the names of ſix or "eight of their preachers. This, with every "other place, being open and exceedingly deſi-"rous to hear the Goſpel, makes me almoſt de-"termine to come back early in the ſpring."

After preaching at *Charleſtown*, he arrived at *Savannah* in *December*, where he found affairs proſpering to his wiſh, "The colony," ſays he, "is "riſing faſt; nothing but plenty at *Betheſda*, and "all arrears, I truſt, will be paid off before I "leave it; ſo that in a ſhort time I hope to be "free from theſe outward incumbrances (*o*)." And he was not diſappointed in his expectations; for he writes, "*Betheſda*, *January* 14, 1765, God

(*m*) Letter MCCCXVIII.

(*n*) A name given to thoſe who favoured the revival of religion under the miniſtry of Mr. *Whitefield*, Mr. *Tennent*, &c.——Letter MCCCXIX.

(*o*) Letter MCCCXXI.

" hath given me great favour in the ſight of the go-
" vernor, council, and aſſembly. A memorial was
" preſented for an additional grant of lands, con-
" ſiſting of two thouſand acres. It was immedi-
" ately complied with. Both houſes addreſſed the
" governor in behalf of the intended college. As
" warm an anſwer was given (*p*). Every heart ſeems
" to leap for joy at the proſpect of its future uti-
" lity (*q*)."——Again, " *Bethesda*, *February* 13. (*r*)
" Yeſterday morning the Governor and Lord *J. A.*
" *G.*——*n*, with ſeveral other gentlemen, fa-
" voured me with their company to breakfaſt.
" But how was my lord ſurprized and delighted!
" After expreſſing himſelf in the ſtrongeſt terms,
" he took me aſide and informed me, that the
" Governor had ſhewed him the accounts, by
" which he found what a great benefactor I had
" been; that the intended college would be of
" the utmoſt utility, to this and the neighbouring
" provinces; that the plan was beautiful, rati-
" onal, and practicable; and that he was perſuaded
" his Majeſty would highly approve of, and alſo
" favour it, with ſome peculiar marks of his royal
" bounty (*s*)."

Having

(*p*) See the memorial, addreſs, and anſwer in Vol. III. of his Works, page 469, *&c.*

(*q*) Letter MCCCXXII. (*r*) Letter MCCCXXIV.

(*s*) He adds, in the ſame letter, " Now farewell, my
" beloved *Bethesda*; ſurely the moſt delightfully ſituated
" place in all the ſouthern parts of *America*.—What a
" bleſſed

Having left *Bethesda* in such comfortable circumstances *February* 18, (*t*) he delayed his proposed tour to the northward, and thought it best to embark directly for *England*, to finish the affair about the college. He spent some time, however, at *Charles-Town* in the month of *March*, and after a very affectionate parting, set out for *Philadelphia*, preaching as he went along in several places (*u*): but no ship offering at *Philadelphia*, he sailed from *New-York* in the *Earl of Halifax* pacquet, and arrived once more in *England*, *July* 5, 1765 (*x*).

After his arrival he found himself still very weak in body, and obliged to go on much more

" blessed winter have I had! Peace, and love, and har-
" mony, and plenty reign here. Mr. *W——t* hath
" done much in a little time. All are surprized at it.
" But he hath worked night and day, and not stirred a
" a mile for many weeks."

(*t*) " Thanks be to GOD, all outward things are set-
" tled on this side the water. The auditing the ac-
" counts, and laying a foundation for a college, hath
" silenced enemies, and comforted friends. The finish-
" ing this affair confirms my call to *England*, at this
" time." Letter MCCCXXIX.

(*u*) " All along from *Charles-Town* to this place
" (*Newcastle*) the cry is 'For Christ's sake stay and
" preach to us.' O for a thousand lives to spend for
" Jesus!" Letter MCCCXXIX.

(*x*) " We have had but a twenty-eight days passage.—
" The transition hath been so sudden, that I can scarce
" believe that I am in *England*. I hope, ere long, to
" have a more sudden transition into a better country."
Letter MCCCXXXI.——[When he arrived at *London*, *July* 21, he was very ill of a nervous fever.]

ſlowly than he uſed to do. Yet this did not diſcourage him from doing what he could, in hopes of ſoon entering into his reſt. "O to end life "well! (ſays he) Methinks I have now but one "more river to paſs over. And we know of one "that can carry us over, without being ankle-"deep (*y*)."

October 6, he was called to open Lady *Huntingdon*'s chapel at *Bath* (*z*), when he preached from 2 *Cor.* vi. 16.

(*y*) Letter MCCCXXXIII.

(*z*) "The chapel is extremely plain, and yet equally "grand. A moſt beautiful original. All was conducted "with great ſolemnity. Though a very wet day, the "place was very full.——I preached in the morning, "Mr. *Townſend* in the evening." Let. MCCCXXXVII.

CHAP.

CHAP. XIX.

From his opening Lady Huntingdon's *Chapel at* Bath, *to his embarking for* America *in the Year* 1769.

AFTER preaching ſome little time at *Bath*, he returned to *London*, from whence, *January* 18, 1766, he writes *(a)* to a friend at *Sheerneſs*, "I am ſorry to acquaint you, that it is not "in my power to comply with your requeſt. For "want of more aſſiſtance, I am confined in town "with the care of two important poſts, when I "am only fit to be put into ſome garriſon among "the invalids." But he was relieved, for a little ſpace, early in the ſpring; for we find him in the month of *March* at *Bath* and *Briſtol.*

March 17, he ſays, "The uncertainty of my mo-"tions hath made me ſlow in writing; and a de-"ſire to be a while free from *London* cares, hath "made me indifferent about frequent hearing "from thence.—Laſt *Friday* evening, and twice "yeſterday *(b)*, I preached at *Bath* to very "thronged and brilliant auditories."

About this time, the Stamp Act was repealed; on which occaſion he greatly exulted. The inte-

(a) Letter MCCCXXXIX. *(b)* Letter MCCCXL.

reſt of the colonies always lay near his heart, and he hoped this ſtep would reſtore peace and happineſs to his country. In his letter book is the following ſentence, "*March* 16, 1766, Stamp Act "repealed, *Gloria Deo.*"

Mr. *Occum*, an Indian preacher, and Mr. *Whitaker*, came over from *America* to ſollicit contributions for Mr. *Wheelock*'s Indian ſchool, an inſtitution which Mr. *Whitefield* greatly approved. Concerning this he writes, (*c*) *London*, *April* 25, "The proſpect of a large and effectual door "opening among the heathens, bleſſed be God, "is very promiſing. Mr. *Occum* is a ſettled, hum-"ble chriſtian: the good and great, with a mul-"titude of a lower degree, heard him preach laſt "week at *Tottenham-Court* Chapel, and felt much "of the power and preſence of our common Lord. "Mr. *R——n* hath preached, and collected one "hundred pounds; and I believe ſeven or eight "hundred pounds more are ſubſcribed. The "truly noble Lord *D——h* eſpouſes the cauſe moſt "heartily, and his Majeſty is become a contri-"butor. The King of Kings, and Lord of all "Lords, will bleſs them for it *(d)*."

(*c*) Letter MCCCXLI.

(d) Mr. *Occum* and Mr. *Whitaker* came afterwards to *Scotland*, and preached at *Edinburgh* and *Glaſgow*, where they got very conſiderable contributions; particularly from Mr. *Sprewll*'s family in *Glaſgow*, and from the Rev. Mr. *M'Culloch* at *Cambuſlang*.

June 19, we find him at *Collam* near *Briſtol*, from whence (*e*) he writes, " As my feveriſh heat " continues, and the weather is too wet to travel, " I have complied with the advice of friends, and " have commenced a hot-well water drinker twice " a day. However, twice this week, at ſix in the " morning, I have been enabled to call thirſty " ſouls to come and drink of the water of life " freely. To-morrow evening, God willing, the " call is to be repeated, and again on *Sunday*.

He was alſo at *Bath* and *Briſtol* in the month of *November* this year. At *Briſtol* he preached to a very crowded auditory (though the weather was exceeding bad) and adminiſtred the ſacrament; and at *Bath* he preached to the moſt numerous aſſembly of the nobility he had ever ſeen attend there.

In the month of *January* 1767, he wrote a recommendatory preface to a new edition of *Bunyan*'s Works; which is inſerted with his Tracts in Vol. IV. and *March* 20, he was called to open Lady *Huntingdon*'s new chapel at *Brighthelmſtone* in *Suſſex*, when he preached on 2 *Peter* iii. 18.

After an excurſion to *Norwich*, in *April* 1767, he ſays, " I fear my ſpring and ſummer fever is " returning. If ſo, my intended plan of operati- " ons will be much contracted. But future " things belong to Him who orders all things " well (*f*)."

(*e*) Letter MCCCXLV. (*f*) Letter MCCCLI.

Yet the very next month we find him preaching at *Rodborough*, *Glouceſter*, and *Haverford-Weſt* in *Wales*; from whence he writes, *May* 31, "Thouſands and thouſands attended by eight in the "morning. Life and light ſeemed to fly all "around. On *Tueſday*, God willing, I am to "preach at *Woodſtock*; on *Friday* at *Pembroke*; here "again next *Sunday* by eight, and then for *Eng-*"*land* (*g*)." And when he returned to *Glouceſter*, "*June* 10, "Bleſſed be God," ſays he, "I am got "on this ſide the *Welch* mountains. Bleſſed be "God, I have been on the other ſide. What a "ſcene laſt *Sunday!* What a cry for more of the "bread of life; but I was quite worn down (*h*)."

September 11. He was at *Leeds*, having preached at *Northampton* and *Sheffield* in the way: and *September* 20, at *Newcaſtle*, from whence he writes, "(*i*) I have now a bleſſed Methodiſt field-ſtreet-"preaching plan before me. This afternoon in "the *Caſtle-Garth*, to-morrow for *Sunderland*, then "to *Yarm*, &c. &c.——I have been enabled to "preach in the ſtreet at ſeveral places, and hope "to go to *Geſborough*, *Whitby*, *Scarborough*, *New-*"*Malton*, *York*, *Leeds*, *Liverpool*, *Cheſter*, *Man-*"*cheſter*, &c."——Again (from *Thirſk*, *September* 28) "My body feels much fatigued in travelling; "comforts in the ſoul over-ballance."——And

(*g*) Letter MCCCLVII. (*h*) Letter MCCCLIX.

(*i*) Let. MCCCLXIV, MCCCLXV, MCCCLXVI, MCCCLXIX.

(*Leeds*,

(*Leeds*, *Octob.* 3) "Field and ſtreet preaching hath "rather bettered than hurt my bodily ~~my~~ health."

This winter his negociations about the intended college at *Betheſda* came to an iſſue. A memorial, addreſſed to his Majeſty, was put into the hands of the clerk of the privy council, ſetting forth the great utility of a college in that place to the inhabitants of the ſouthern provinces, and praying that a charter might be granted upon the plan of the college at *New-Jerſey*. This memorial was by him tranſmitted to the Lord Preſident, and by his lordſhip referred to the conſideration of the Archbiſhop of *Canterbury*, to whom alſo a draft of an intended charter was preſented by the Earl of *D———h*. Upon which an epiſtolary correſpondence enſued betwixt the Archbiſhop and Mr. *Whitefield*; the ſum of which was, the Archbiſhop put the draft of the charter into the hands of the Lord Preſident, who promiſed to conſider it; and gave it as his opinion, that, "the head of the college ought to "be a member of the church of *England*. That "this was a qualification not to be diſpenſed with. "And alſo that the public prayers ſhould not be "extempore ones, but the liturgy of the church, "or ſome other ſettled and eſtabliſhed form." Mr. *Whitefield* anſwered, he could not agree to either of theſe reſtrictions, becauſe the greateſt part of the Orphan-houſe collections and contributions came from diſſenters; and becauſe he had frequently declared the intended college was to be founded upon "a broad bottom, and no other. This," ſays he,

"I

" I judged I was ſufficiently warranted to do, from " the known, long eſtabliſhed, mild, and uncoer- " cive genius of the *Engliſh* government; alſo " from your grace's moderation towards proteſ- " tant diſſenters; from the unconquerable at- " tachment of the *Americans* to toleration-princi- " ples, as well as from the avowed habitual feel- " ings and ſentiments of my own heart. This " being the caſe,——and as your grace by your " ſilence ſeems to be like-minded with the Lord " P——t; and as your grace's and his lordſhip's " influence will undoubtedly extend itſelf to others, " I would beg leave, after returning all due ac- " knowledgments, to inform your grace that I " intend troubling your grace and his lordſhip no " more about this ſo long depending concern. " As it hath pleaſed the great head of the church " in ſome degree to renew my bodily ſtrength, I " purpoſe now to renew my feeble efforts, and " turn the charity into a more generous, and con- " ſequently into a more extenſively uſeful channel. " I have no ambition to be looked upon as the " founder of a college; but I would fain act the " part of an honeſt man, a diſintereſted miniſter " of Jeſus Chriſt, and a truly catholic, moderate " preſbyter of the church of *England (k)*."

Accord-

(k) See his Works, Vol. III. page 472—484, where the ſteps he took in this affair are more fully narrated in a letter to Governor *Wright*—and Let. MCCCLXXVII, in which he complains to his intimate friend Mr. *K——n*,

" None

Accordingly he reſolved, in the mean time, to add a public academy to the Orphan-houſe, like what was done at *Philadelphia*, before it's college charter was granted; and to wait for a more favourable opportunity of making freſh application, for a charter upon a broad bottom.

October 28. he preached at the Tabernacle, to the Society for promoting Religious Knowledge among the Poor, when the collection amounted to above a hundred pounds, (about four times as much as uſual) and eighty perſons became new ſubſcribers (*l*).

In the beginning of the year 1768, ſix pious ſtudents were expelled from *Edmund-Hall* in *Oxford*, for uſing extempore prayer, reading and ſinging hymns, and exhorting one another in private religious meetings. Upon this occaſion,

" None but God knows what a concern lies upon me " now in reſpect to *Betheſda*. As another voyage, per- " haps, may be the iſſue and reſult of all at laſt, I " would beg you, and my dear Mr. *H——y*, to let me " have my papers and letters, that I may reviſe and diſ- " poſe of them in a proper manner. This can do no " hurt, come life, or come death."

(*l*) His text was, *Luke* xi. 2. " Thy kingdom come." The place was quite full, and many went away for want of room. A great number of diſſenting miniſters were preſent; probably, more than ever before met to hear a church clergyman preach. He afterwards dined with the miniſters and whole company at *Draper's-Hall*, where he was treated with great reſpect. All was very harmonious, and gave him great pleaſure in reflection. See Letter MCCCLXXV.

Mr. *Whitefield* wrote his letter to Dr. *Durell*, Vice-chancellor of the univerſity (*ll*).

In the ſummer, he went once more to *Edinburgh*, where his Orphan-houſe-Park congregations were as large, attentive, and affectionate as ever (*m*).

Auguſt 3. ſoon after his return to *London*, Mrs. *Whitefield* was attacked with an inflammatory fever, and the 9th of *Auguſt* ſhe died. The 14th of the month he preached her funeral ſermon, from *Rom.* viii. 20: and *September* 12. he writes, "I have been in hopes of my own departure. "Through hard riding, and frequent preaching, "I have burſt a vein. The flux is in a great "meaſure ſtopped, but reſt and quietneſs are "ſtrictly enjoined. We were favoured with glo-"rious Goſpel-gales this day fortnight, and ſeve-"ral preceding days, at opening good Lady "*Huntingdon*'s chapel, and place of pious edu-"cation in *Wales* (*n*)."

(*ll*) See his Works, Vol. IV.

(*m*) Letter MCCCLXXXVII, MCCCLXXXVIII.

(*n*) From his Memorandum Book. "*Auguſt* 24, "1768, Opened good Lady *Huntingdon*'s Chapel and "College, in the pariſh of *Talgarth*, *Brecknockſhire*, "*South Wales*. Preached from *Exodus* xx. 24. 'In 'all places where I record my name, I will come unto 'thee, and I will bleſs thee.' "*Auguſt* 25. Gave an "exhortation to the ſtudents in the College-chapel "from *Luke* i. 15. 'He ſhall be great in the ſight of 'the LORD.' "*Sunday*, *Auguſt* 28. Preached in the "court before the College, (the congregation conſiſt-"ing of ſome thouſands) from 1 *Cor.* iii. 11. 'Other 'foundation can no man lay, than that which is laid, 'which is *Jeſus Chriſt*.'

September 26. he writes concerning his friend and fellow-labourer Mr. *Middleton:* " He is now " made perfectly whole. He was buried from " the Tabernacle laſt *Wedneſday* evening, and a " ſubſcription is opened for his four orphans. " In the midſt of his torturing pains, being aſked " by his daughter, How he was? He anſwered, ' A heaven upon earth.' " Soon afterwards he " fell aſleep in *Jeſus (o)*."

From his letters dated in *November* and *December*, it appears he was in a very poor ſtate of health, yet ſtill continued to preach, as often as he was able.

" *Briſtol, November* 12. Laſt night, I hope, " the Redeemer manifeſted forth his glory. *Fri-* " *day* evening, and the following *Sunday*, I ſhall " preach at *Bath*. In three weeks I expect to " reach *London*, except called before that period, " to reſide at the *New Jeruſalem*. The pleaſ- " ing proſpect lies day and night open before " me *(p)*."

Next ſpring, 1769, he ſeems to have recovered a little; for we find him preaching more frequently. It gave him great pleaſure to ſee ſome more of the nobility joined to Lady *H———n*'s ſociety. " Some more coronets, I hear, are likely to be " laid at the Redeemer's feet. They glitter glo-

(*o*) Letter MCCCXCVII.

(*p*) Letter MCCCXCVIII.

rioufly

" riouſly when ſet in, and ſurrounded with a " crown of thorns *(q)*."

In the month of *May* he preached at *Kingſwood*, *Briſtol*, *Bradford*, *Frome*, *Chippenham*, *Rodborough*, *Caſtlecomb*, *Durſley*. But deferred his weſtern-circuit on account of the opening the Chapel at *Tunbridge (r)*.

July 23, 1769, he opened Lady *Huntingdon*'s New Chapel at *Tunbridge Wells*. Preached from *Gen.* xxviii. 17. " This is none other but the " Houſe of GOD, and this is the Gate of Hea- " ven." In the evening, the congregation being too large to be contained in the chapel, he preached out of doors, from a mount in the court before the chapel; after which he gave a general exhortation; and next day adminiſtered the ſacrament, and preached from 1 *Theſſ.* ii. 11, 12.

Now he ſeriouſly began to prepare for another voyage; and in the beginning of *September* he embarked the ſeventh and laſt time for *America (s)*.

(*q*) Letter MCCCCIX. (*r*) Letter MCCCCXIII.

(*s*) In the *Friendſhip*, Capt. *Ball*. Let. MCCCCXXV. " I am comforted on every ſide. A civil captain and " paſſengers. All willing to attend on divine worſhip, " and to hear of religious things."

CHAP.

CHAP. XX.

From his laſt embarking for America, *to his Death*, September 30, 1770.

MR. *Whitefield* was detained near a month in the *Downs* by contrary winds *(t)*; but he improved his time, as uſual, in writing many excellent letters, preaching on board; and ſometimes came aſhore and preached, both at *Deal* and *Ramſgate*.

The following extract of Mr. *Whitefield*'s Manuſcript Journal, relative to this period, cannot be unacceptable.

" *Saturday*, *September* 2. Had a moſt awful " parting ſeaſon at *Tottenham-Court* Chapel Sacra- " ment, laſt *Sunday* morning, the Sermon from " *Gen.* xxviii. 12. And the ſame at Tabernacle " (which was more than full) on *Wedneſday* morn- " ing at ſeven o'clock. This day dined at my " worthy, faſt, and tried friend Mr. *Keen*'s; and " having comfortably ſettled and left all my out- " ward concerns in his hands, I took an affec- " tionate leave, and in company with ſome dear " friends, this evening reached *Graveſend*; where " others met us. We ſupped and converſed to-

(t) One ſhip was loſt, but the paſſengers eſcaped in the boat. Letter MCCCCXXX.

" gether in ſome degree, I truſt, like perſons " who hoped, ere long, to ſit down together " at the marriage-feaſt of the ſupper of the " Lamb. Haſten, O Lord, that wiſhed for " time!

" *Sunday, September* 3. Preached this morning " at the Methodiſt Tabernacle from *John* xiith. " verſe 32d. The congregation was not very " large. But God gave me great freedom of " ſpeech, and made it indeed a Houſe of God, " and Gate of Heaven. In the afternoon, I " preached in the market-place from *Gen.* iii. " verſe 13th, to a much larger, but not more " devout auditory. In the out-ſkirts, as might " naturally be expected, ſome were a little noiſy, " but a great body was very attentive, and I was " enabled to lift up my voice like a trumpet. " The remainder of the evening was ſpent as the " night before, with my chriſtian *London* friends; " who with me, leſs than the leaſt of all, exceed- " ingly rejoiced at the opportunity of a parting " ſtreet-market-place preaching, where, I truſt, " ſome pennyleſs bankrupt ſinners were made " willing to buy Goſpel wine and milk, without " money, and without price. May the great day " ſhow that this hope was not altogether ill- " grounded!

" *Monday, September* 4. Had my dear chriſtian " friends on board to breakfaſt with me this " morning. Converſation was ſweet, but part- " ing bitter. 'What mean you (ſaid the Apoſtle)

" to

" to weep and break my heart?' " However, " through infinite mercy, I was helped to bear " up, and after their departure the Divine Pre- " ſence made up the loſs of all, even with new " creature comforts. Lord, if this Divine Pre- " ſence go not with, and accompany me all the " way, for thy infinite mercies ſake, ſuffer me not " to go one ſtep farther.

" But I believe thy promiſe Lord,
" Oh! help my unbelief.

" *Tueſday, September 5.* The Captain not com- " ing down as was expected, we did not weigh " anchor till this morning's ebb.

" The winds being contrary, and the weather " hazy, we did not arrive in the *Downs* till the " *Friday* following. Interim, I had the oppor- " tunity of converſing a little with the pilot, " and ſteerage paſſengers. All attended divine " worſhip very orderly, and thanked me for my " offer of lending them books, and giving them " what aſſiſtance lay in my power towards mak- " ing their voyage comfortable. All ſeemed " thankful, and the pilot parted with tears in " his eyes. May the great, and never-failing " pilot, the Almighty *Jeſus*, renew us, and take " us all into his holy protection, and then all " muſt neceſſarily end in our ſafe arrival in the " haven of eternal reſt!

" *Tueſday, September* 12. Preached laſt *Sun-* " *day* morning to my little flock on board, and

" was moſt agreeably ſurprized to-day, with a " kind unexpected viſit from the Rev. Dr. *Gib-* " *bons*. His diſcourſe was very friendly and " devout.

" *Wedneſday*, *September* 13. I went aſhore and " attended on an ordination ſolemnity, at the " diſſenting-meeting. Several miniſters officiated. " Several very important queſtions were aſked, " and anſwered before, and a ſolemn charge " given after, impoſition of hands. But the " prayer put up in the very act of laying on " of hands, by Dr. *Gibbons*, was ſo affecting, " and the looks and behaviour of thoſe that " joined ſo ſerious and ſolemn, that I hardly " know when I was more ſtruck under any " ones miniſtration. The ordination being over, " at the deſire of the miniſters, and other gen- " tlemen, I went and dined with them. Our " converſation was edifying. And being inform- " ed, that many were deſirous to hear me " preach, I willingly complied, and I truſt ſome " ſeed was ſown the ſame evening at *Deal*, which, " by God's heavenly bleſſing, will ſpring up to " life eternal. The people of *Deal* ſeemed very " civil, and ſome came to me who had not " forgotten my preaching to them, and their " deceaſed friends and parents, thirty-two years " ago.

" *Friday*, *September* 14, 15. I had received " moſt preſſing invitations to viſit *Ramſgate*, " many weeks ago. Theſe were now repeated

" by many of that place, who came to the or-
" dination at *Deal*; ſo there was no reſiſting
" their importunity. We reached *Ramſgate* about
" two, took ſome refreſhment, and there I
" preached about four, not to a very large,
" but an attentive and affected auditory. This
" I did alſo the morning following; and was
" moſt agreeably entertained with the diſcourſe,
" and good memory of one, in particular, who
" had been my fellow-paſſenger, and frequent
" hearer many years ago, in the *Wilmington*,
" Captain *Darling*, bound to *Piſcataway* in *New*
" *England*. The people's behaviour here was ſo
" undiſſembledly generous, frank, genteel, and
" chriſtian, that I know not where I have been
" more pleaſed and delighted. Being quite un-
" eaſy, leſt by ſtaying longer I ſhould be un-
" ready, if the wind ſhould turn favourable, I
" went early on *Sunday* morning to *Deal*, and
" from thence immediately on board, and preach-
" ed in the afternoon. This morning, came a
" ſurreptitious copy of my Tabernacle Farewell
" Sermon, taken, as the ſhort-hand writer pro-
" feſſes, *verbatim*, as I ſpoke it. But ſurely he
" is miſtaken. The whole is ſo injudiciouſly
" paragraphed, and ſo wretchedly unconnected,
" that I owe no thanks to the miſguided, though
" it may be well-meant zeal of the writer and
" publiſher, be they who they will. But ſuch
" conduct is an unavoidable tax upon popularity.
" And all that appear for *Jeſus Chriſt*, and his

" bleſſed Goſpel, muſt like their maſter, expect " to ſuffer from the falſe fire of profeſſing friends, " as well as ſecret malice of avowed enemies. " However, if any one ſentence is bleſſed to the " conviction of one ſinner, or the edification of any " individual ſaint, I care not what becomes of my " character, though I would always pray to be pre- " ſerved from bringing upon myſelf, or others, " needleſs, unneceſſary contempt.

" *Monday*, *September* 25. Weighed anchor laſt " *Tueſday* morning, with a ſmall favourable gale " and fine weather. So many ſhips which had " lain in the *Downs*, moving at the ſame time, " and gently gliding by us, together with the " proſpect of the adjacent ſhore, made a moſt " agreeable ſcene. But it proved only a very " tranſient one. For by that time we got to " *Fairlee*, the wind backened, clouds gathered, " very violent gales ſucceeded, and for ſeveral " days we were ſo toſſed, that after coming over " againſt *Brighthelmſtone*, the Captain rightly " judging, turned back, (as did many other " ſhips) and anchored over againſt *New Rumſey* " and *Dungeneſs*. Lord, in thine own time, thou " wilt give the winds a commiſſion to carry us " forward towards our deſired port."

At laſt they got out of the channel, and on the 30th of *November*, arrived at *Charles-Town* in *South Carolina*. It had been a dangerous and trying paſſage; yet, on his arrival, he found himſelf in better health than at the end of any voyage

he

he had made for ſeveral years; and the ſame day that he came aſhore, he preached at *Charles-Town*, where his reception was as hearty, or heartier than ever *(u)*.

Here Mr. *Wright* came to meet him, and acquainted him that all was in great forwardneſs at *Bethesda*. And when he arrived there, he writes, "*January* 1770. Every thing exceeds "my moſt ſanguine expectations. And the in-"creaſe of this colony is almoſt incredible *(x)*."

The great regard which the Colony of *Georgia* thought themſelves bound to expreſs towards Mr. *Whitefield*, at this time particularly, appears from the following authentic papers.

"Commons Houſe of Aſſembly, *Monday*, "*January* 29, 1770. Mr. Speaker reported,

(u) From his Memorandum Book. "For the laſt "week *(November* 1769) we were beating about our "port, within ſight of it, and confined for two days "in Five-fathom-hole, juſt over the bar. A dangerous "ſituation, as the wind blew hard, and our ſhip, like "a young Chriſtian, for want of more ballaſt, would "not obey the helm. But through infinite mercy, on "*November* 30, a pilot-boat came and took us ſafe "aſhore to *Charles-Town*, after being on board almoſt "thirteen weeks. Friends received me moſt cordially. "Praiſe the LORD, O my ſoul, and forget not all his "mercies. Oh, to begin to be a Chriſtian, and Mi-"niſter of *Jeſus*." See Letter MCCCCXLI.

(x) Letters MCCCCXLV, MCCCCXLVI. Two wings were added to the Orphan-houſe, for the accommodation of ſtudents; of which, Governor *Wright*, condeſcended to lay the foundation, *March* 25, 1769. See Vol. III.

" that he, with the Houſe, having waited on " the Rev. Mr. *Whitefield*, in conſequence of his " invitation, at the Orphan-houſe Academy; " heard him preach a very ſuitable and pious " ſermon on the occaſion; and with great plea- " ſure obſerved the promiſing appearance of im- " provement, towards the good purpoſes intend- " ed, and the decency and propriety of behavi- " our of the ſeveral reſidents there; and were " ſenſibly affected, when they ſaw the happy " ſucceſs which has attended Mr. *Whitefield*'s in- " defatigable zeal for promoting the welfare of " the province in general, and the Orphan-houſe " in particular. Ordered, That this report be " printed in the *Gazette*.

" *John Simpſon*, Clerk."

Extract from the *Georgia Gazette*. " *Savannah*, " *January* 31, 1770. Laſt *Sunday*, his Excel- " lency the Governor, Council, and Aſſembly, " having been invited by the Rev. Mr. *George* " *Whitefield*, attended at divine ſervice in the " Chapel of the Orphan-houſe Academy, where " prayers were read by the Rev. Mr. *Ellington*, " and a very ſuitable ſermon was preached by " the Rev. Mr. *Whitefield* from *Zechariah* iv. 10. " *For who hath deſpiſed the day of ſmall things?* " to the general ſatisfaction of the auditory; in " which he took occaſion to mention the many " diſcouragements he met with, well known to " many there, in carrying on this inſtitution for " upwards of thirty years paſt, and the preſent

" prom ng

" promiſing proſpect of its future and more ex-
" tenſive uſefulneſs. After divine ſervice, the
" company were very politely entertained with
" a handſome and plentiful dinner; and were
" greatly pleaſed to ſee the uſeful improvements
" made in the houſe, the two additional wings
" for apartments for ſtudents, one hundred and
" fifty feet each in length, and other leſſer build-
" ings, in ſo much forwardneſs; and the whole
" executed with taſte, and in a maſterly manner;
" and being ſenſible of the truly generous and
" diſintereſted benefactions derived to the Pro-
" vince through his means, they expreſſed their
" gratitude in the moſt reſpectful terms."

Soon after this he writes from *Charles-Town*, *February* 10. " Through mercy, I enjoy a greater
" ſhare of bodily health than I have known for
" many years. I am now enabled to preach al-
" moſt every day. Bleſſed be God, all things are
" in great forwardneſs at *Betheſda*. I have con-
" verſed with the Governor, concerning an Act
" of Aſſembly, for the eſtabliſhment of the in-
" tended Orphan-houſe College *(y)*. He moſt

(y) See a paper of College Rules, at the end of Vol. III. which was found written with his own hand, and in which he orders the following authors in divinity to be read: *Henry*, *Doddridge*, *Guyſe*, *Burkitt*, *Williſon*, Prof. *Franck*, *Boſton*, *Jenks*, *Hervey*, *Hall*, *Edwards*, *Trapp*, *Pool*, *Warner*, *Leighton*, *Pearſon*, *Owen*, *Bunyan*. And the Homilies to be read publicly by rotation. He intended to publiſh a new edition of the Homilies, the Preface to which (with Prayers on ſeveral Occaſions) is to be ſeen in Vol. IV.

" readily

" readily conſents. I have ſhown him a draught, " which he much approves of; and all will be " finiſhed at my return from the northward. " In the mean while the buildings will be car- " ried on *(yy)*."

His letters of a later date are in the ſame ſtrain, full of expreſſions of gratitude to Providence for the good ſtate of his health *(z)*, and how exeedingly happy he was at *Betheſda (a)*. And of his purpoſe, (after he had travelled in the northern parts all ſummer) to return to his beloved *Betheſda*, late in the fall *(b)*. But this event never happened.

From *Philadelphia*, *May* 24 *(c)*. he writes, " I " have now been here near three weeks. People " of all ranks flock as much as ever. Impreſ- " ſions are made on many, and, I truſt, they will " abide. Notwithſtanding, I preach twice on

(yy) Letter MCCCCXLVII. where he adds, " Since " my being in *Charles-Town*, I have ſhewn the draught " to ſome perſons of great eminence and influence. " They highly approve of it, and willingly conſent to " be ſome of the Wardens. Near twenty are to be of " *Georgia*, and about ſix of this place; one of *Phila-* " *delphia*; one of *New York*; one of *Boſton*; three of " *Edinburgh*; two of *Glaſgow*; and ſix of *London*. " Thoſe of *Georgia* and *South Carolina*, are to be qua- " lified; the others, to be only honorary correſponding " Wardens."

(z) Let^s. MCCCCL, MCCCCLVII, MCCCCLIX, MCCCCLX.

(a) Let. MCCCCXLVIII, MCCCCLII, MCCCCLIV.

(b) Letter MCCCCLIX. *(c)* Letter MCCCCLX.

" the

" the Lord's-day, and three or four times a week " beſides, yet I am rather better than I have been " for many years."

Again, *Philadelphia*, *June* 14, *(d)* " This leaves " me juſt returned from a one hundred and fifty " miles circuit, in which, bleſſed be God, I have " been enabled to preach every day.——So many " invitations are ſent from various quarters, that " I know not which way to turn myſelf."

And, *New-York*, *June* 30, *(e)* " Next week I " purpoſe to go to *Albany*. From thence, per- " haps, to the *Oneida* Indians. There is to be a " very large Indian congreſs. Mr. *Kirkland* ac- " companies me. He is a truly chriſtian mini- " ſter, and miſſionary. Every thing poſſible ſhould " be done to ſtrengthen his hands.——Perhaps I " may not ſee *Georgia* till *Chriſtmas*." In his me- " morandum-book is the following remark (†).

And again, from *New-York*, *July* 29, he writes, *(f)* " During this month I have been above a five

(d) Letter MCCCCLXI. *(e)* Letter MCCCCLXII.

(†) " *July* 2, 1770. Sailed from *New-York* with Mr. " *Kirkland*, and two kind old friends, and arrived at *Al-* " *bany*, *July* 6. Was kindly received by Mr. *Bays* and " *Domine Weſtalbe*. Preached the ſame evening, and " went the next day to ſee the *Cohoes Falls*, twelve miles " from *Albany*. O thou wonder-working GOD! Preached " twice on the LORD's day at *Albany*, and the next day " at *Shenectady*, and was ſtruck at the delightful ſituation " of the place. Heard afterwards that the word ran, " and was glorified both there and at *Albany*. Grace, " Grace!"

(f) Letter MCCCCLXIII.

" hundred miles circuit, and have been enabled " to preach and travel through the heat every day. " The congregations have been very large, atten- " tive, and affected, particularly at *Albany*, *Sche-* " *nectady*, *Great Bamington*, *Norfolk*, *Salisbury*, " *Sharon*, *Smithfield*, *Powkepsey*, *Fish-Hill*, *New-* " *Rumbart*, *New-Windsor*, and *Peckshill*.——Invi- " tations crowd upon me both from ministers and " people, from many, many quarters.——I hope " to set out for *Boston* in two or three days."

When he was at *Boston*, *September* 17, he writes to Mr. *W——t* at *Bethesda*, *(g)* " Fain would I " contrive to come by Captain *Souder* from *Phila-* " *delphia*, but people are so importunate for my " stay in these parts, that I fear it will be imprac- " ticable.——Two or three evenings ago, I was " taken in the night with a violent lax, attended " with reaching and shivering—but through mer- " cy I am restored, and to-morrow morning hope " to begin again.—I hope it hath been well with " you, and all my family; hoping, ere long, to " see you, *&c.*"

And lastly, to his dear friend Mr. *R—— K——n* in *London*, *Portsmouth*, *New-Hampshire*, *September* 23. *(h)* " By this time I thought to be moving " southward; but never was greater importunity " used to detain me longer in these northern parts. " Poor *New-England* is much to be pitied: *Boston* " people most of all. How grossly misrepre-

(g) Letter MCCCCLXIV. *(h)* Letter MCCCCLXV.

" sented!

" ſented!——You will ſee by the many invitati-
" ons, what a door is opened for preaching the
" everlaſting Goſpel. I was ſo ill on *Friday*, that
" I could not preach, though thouſands were
" waiting to hear. Well! the day of releaſe will
" ſhortly come; but it does not ſeem yet: for
" by riding ſixty miles I am better, and hope to
" preach here to-morrow.——If ſpared ſo long, I
" hope to ſee *Georgia* about *Chriſtmas*.——Still
" pray and praiſe.——Hoping to ſee all dear
" friends about the time propoſed, and earneſtly
" deſiring a continued intereſt in all your prayers,
" *&c.*"

From the 17th to the 20th of *September* he preached daily at *Boſton*; *September* 20, at *Newton*: *September* 21, he ſet out from *Boſton* upon a tour to the eaſtward, pretty much indiſpoſed: preached at *Portſmouth* and *New-Hampſhire*, *September* 23: And from that to the 29th continued preaching every day; thrice at *Portſmouth*, once at *Kittery*, and once at *Old-York*. *Saturday* morning, *September* 29, he ſet out for *Boſton*; but before he came to *Newbury-Port*, where he had engaged to preach next morning, he was importuned to preach by the way, at *Exeter*. At this laſt place he preached in the open air, to accommodate the multitudes that came to hear him, no houſe being able to contain them. He continued his diſcourſe near two hours, was greatly fatigued, and in the afternoon ſet out for *Newbury-Port*, where he arrived that evening; went early to bed, it being *Saturday* night, intend-

ing

ing to preach the next day. He awaked several times in the night, and complained much of a difficulty of breathing. At six o'clock on the Lord's day morning, he expired in a fit of the asthma.

Mr. *Richard Smith*, who accompanied Mr. *Whitefield* from *England* to *America* the last time, and in his journeyings when there, to the time of his death, hath given a particular account of his death and interment, which it may not be improper to insert.

" On *Saturday*, *September* 29, 1770, Mr. *White-*
" *field* rode from *Portsmouth* to *Exeter* (fifteen miles)
" in the morning, and preached there to a very
" great multitude, in the fields. It is remarkable
" that before he went out to preach that day
" (which proved to be his last sermon) Mr.
" *Clarkson* senior, observing him more uneasy
" than usual, said to him, ' Sir, you are more fit
" to go to bed than to preach.' To which Mr.
" *Whitefield* answered, ' True, Sir :' but turning
" aside, he clasped his hands together, and, look-
" ing up, spoke, ' Lord Jesus, I am weary in
" thy work, but not of thy work. If I have not yet
" finished my course, let me go and speak for thee
" once more in the fields, seal thy truth, and come
" home and die.' The text he preached from
" was 2 *Corinth.* xiii. 5. He dined at Captain
" *Gillman*'s. After dinner, Mr. *Whitefield* and
" Mr. *Parsons* rode to *Newbury*. I did not get
" there till two hours after them. I found them
" at supper. I asked Mr. *Whitefield* how he felt

" himself

" himſelf after his journey. He ſaid, 'he was
" tired, therefore he ſupped early, and would
" go to bed.' He eat a very little ſupper, talked
" but little, aſked Mr. *Parſons* to diſcharge the
" table, and perform family duty; and then re-
" tired up ſtairs. He ſaid, 'that he would ſit
" and read till I came to him,' which I did as
" ſoon as poſſible, and found him reading in
" the Bible, with Dr. *Watts*'s Pſalms lying open
" before him. He aſked me for ſome water-
" gruel, and took about half his uſual quantity;
" and kneeling down by the bedſide, cloſed the
" evening with prayer. After a little converſa-
" tion, he went to reſt and ſlept till two in the
" morning, when he awoke me, and aſked for a
" little cyder; he drank about a wine glaſs full.
" I aſked him how he felt, for he ſeemed to pant
" for breath. He told me 'His aſthma was com-
" ing on him again; I muſt have two or three
" days reſt. Two or three days riding, without
" preaching, would ſet me up again.' Soon after-
" wards he aſked me to put the window up a
" little higher (though it was half up all night)
" for, ſaid he, 'I cannot breathe, but I hope I
" ſhall be better by and by; a good pulpit-ſweat
" to-day may give me relief; I ſhall be better
" after preaching.' I ſaid to him, I wiſhed he
" would not preach ſo often. He replied, 'I had
" rather wear out, than ruſt out.' I then told
" him, I was afraid he took cold in preaching
" yeſterday. He ſaid, 'He believed he had;'

" and

" and then ſat up in the bed and prayed, that
" God would be pleaſed to bleſs his preaching
" where he had been, and alſo bleſs his preaching
" that day, that more ſouls might be brought to
" Chriſt, and prayed for direction, whether he
" ſhould winter at *Boſton*, or haſten to the ſouth-
" ward: prayed for a bleſſing on his *Betheſda* Col-
" lege, and his dear family there; for Tabernacle
" and Chapel congregations, and all his connec-
" tions on the other ſide the water, and then laid
" himſelf down to ſleep again. This was nigh
" three o'clock. At a quarter paſt four, he waked,
" and ſaid, 'My aſthma, my aſthma is coming on,
" I wiſh I had not given out word to preach at
" *Haverhill* on *Monday*; I don't think I ſhall be
" able: but, I ſhall ſee what to-day will bring
" forth. If I am no better to-morrow, I will take
" a two or three days ride.' He then deſired me
" to warm him a little gruel, and in breaking the
" fire-wood, I waked Mr. *Parſons*; who thinking
" I knocked for him, roſe and came in. He
" went to Mr. *Whitefield*'s bed-ſide, and aſked him
" how he felt himſelf. He anſwered, 'I am al-
" moſt ſuffocated, I can ſcarce breathe: my aſthma
" quite choaks me.' I was then not a little ſur-
" prized, to hear how quick and with what diffi-
" culty he drew his breath. He got out of bed,
" and went to the open window for air. This
" was exactly at five o'clock. I went to him, and
" for about the ſpace of five minutes, I ſaw no
" danger, only that he had a great difficulty in

" breath-

" breathing, as I had often ſeen before. Soon " afterwards he turned himſelf to me, and ſaid, " *I am dying*. I ſaid, I hope not, Sir. He ran " to the other window panting for breath, but " could get no relief. It was agreed I ſhould go " for Dr. *Sawyer*; and on my coming back, I ſaw " death on his face, and he again ſaid, ' *I am dy-* " *ing*.' His eyes were fixed, his under lip draw- " ing inward every time he drew breath; he went " towards the window, and we offered him ſome " warm wine with Lavender drops, which he re- " fuſed. I perſuaded him to ſit down in the " chair, and have his cloak on; he conſented by " a ſign, but could not ſpeak. I then offered him " the glaſs of warm wine; he took half of it, but " it ſeemed as if it would have ſtopped his breath " entirely. In a little time he brought up a conſi- " derable quantity of phlegm and wind. I then " began to have ſome ſmall hopes. Mr. *Parſons* " ſaid, he thought Mr. *Whitefield* breathed more " freely than he did, and would recover. I ſaid, " No Sir, he is certainly dying. I was continu- " ally employed in taking the phlegm out of his " mouth with a handkerchief, and bathing his " temples with drops, rubbing his wriſts, *&c.* to " give him relief, if poſſible; but all in vain, his " hands and feet were cold as clay. When the " doctor came in, and ſaw him in the chair lean- " ing on my breaſt, he felt his pulſe, and ſaid, " He is a dead man.' Mr. *Parſons* ſaid, 'I do " not believe it, you muſt do ſomething doctor.'

" He ſaid, ' I cannot; he is now near his laſt " breath.' And indeed ſo it was, for he fetched " but one gaſp, and ſtretched out his feet, and " breathed no more. This was exactly at ſix " o'clock. We continued rubbing his legs and " hands and feet with warm cloths, and bathed " him with ſpirits for ſome time, but all in vain. " I then put him into a warm bed, the doctor " ſtanding by, and often raiſed him upright, con- " tinued rubbing him and putting ſpirits to his " noſe for an hour, till all hopes were gone. The " people came in crowds to ſee him; I begged " the doctor to ſhut the door.

" The Rev. Mr. *Parſons*, at whoſe houſe my " dear Maſter died, ſent for Captain *Fetcomb*, and " Mr. *Boadman*, and others of his Elders and " Deacons, and they took the whole care of the " burial upon themſelves, prepared the vault, " and ſent and invited the bearers. Many mini- " ſters of all perſuaſions came to the houſe of the " Rev. Mr. *Parſons*, where ſeveral of them gave " a very particular account of their firſt awaken- " ing under his miniſtry, ſeveral years ago, and " alſo of many in their congregations, that to " their knowledge, under God, owed their con- " verſion wholly to his coming among them, often " repeating the bleſſed ſeaſons they had enjoyed " under his preaching: and all ſaid, that this laſt " viſit was attended with more power than any " other, and that all oppoſition fell before him. " Then one and another of them would pity and

" pray

" pray for his dear Tabernacle and Chapel con-
" gregations, and it was truly affecting to hear
" them bemoan *America* and *England*'s loſs. Thus
" they continued for two hours converſing about
" his great uſefulneſs, and praying that God
" would ſcatter his gifts and drop his mantle
" among them. When the corpſe was placed at
" the foot of the pulpit, cloſe to the vault, the
" Rev. Mr. *Daniel Rogers* made a very affecting
" prayer, and openly confeſſed, that under God,
" he owed his converſion to the labours of that
" dear Man of God, whoſe precious remains now
" lay before them. Then he cried out, 'O my
" father, my father!' then ſtopt and wept, as
" though his heart would break, and the people
" weeping all through the place. Then he reco-
" vered, and finiſhed his prayer, and ſat down
" and wept. Then one of the deacons gave out
" that hymn, '*Why do we mourn departing friends?*'
" Some of the people weeping, ſome ſinging, and
" ſo on alternately. The Rev. Mr. *Jewel* preached
" a funeral diſcourſe, and made an affectionate
" addreſs to his brethren to lay to heart the death
" of that uſeful man of God; begging that he
" and they might be upon their watch-tower, and
" endeavour to follow his bleſſed example. The
" corpſe was then put into the vault, and all con-
" cluded with a ſhort prayer, and diſmiſſion of
" the people, who went weeping through the
" ſtreets to their reſpective places of abode."

The melancholy news of Mr. *Whitefield*'s death reached *London* on *Monday November* 5, 1770, by the *Boſton* Gazette, and by three letters from different perſons at *Boſton*, to his friend Mr. *Keen*, who alſo by the ſame poſt received two of his own hand-writing, written in health: one ſeven, and the other five days before his death. Mr. *Keen* had the melancholy event notified the ſame night at the Tabernacle, and the next night at *Tottenham-Court* Chapel. His next ſtep was to conſider of a proper perſon to preach the funeral ſermon; and recollecting he had often ſaid to Mr. *Whitefield*, If you ſhould die abroad, whom ſhall we get to preach your funeral ſermon? Muſt it be your old friend the Rev. Mr. *John Weſley?* And having received conſtantly for anſwer, "He is the "man." Mr. *Keen* accordingly waited on the Rev. Mr. *Weſtley* on the *Saturday* following, and engaged him to preach it on the Lord's day, *November* 18, which he did to a very large, crowded, and mournful auditory: many hundreds going away, who could not poſſibly get in.

In both the places of worſhip the pulpits, *&c.* were hung with black cloth, and the galleries with fine black baize. The pulpits had eſcutcheons placed in the front, and on each of the houſes adjoining, hatchments were put up: the motto on each was "*Mea vita Salus & Gloria Chriſtus.*" Six months expired before the mourning was taken down, and the eſcutcheons hung up in each veſtry. The hatchments remained twelve months, and

when taken down, one was placed in the Tabernacle, the other in the Chapel over a neat marble monument Mr. *Whitefield* had erected for his wife, with room left for a few lines reſpecting himſelf after his deceaſe, as he purpoſed lying in the ſame vault had he died in *England*. Accordingly the Rev. Mr. *Knight* of *Halifax*, in *Yorkſhire*, drew up the following lines.

In Memory of
The Rev. Mr. *George Whitefield*, A. M.
Chaplain to the Right Honourable the Counteſs of *Huntingdon*, whoſe Soul made meet for Glory was taken to *Immanuel*'s boſom, on the 30th of *September* 1770; and whoſe body now lies in the ſilent Grave at *Newbury-Port*, near *Boſton*, in *New-England*, there depoſited in hope of a joyful Reſurrection to eternal Life and Glory.

He was a Man eminent in Piety, of a humane, benevolent, and charitable Diſpoſition; his Zeal in the Cauſe of God was ſingular, his Labours indefatigable, and his Succeſs in preaching the Goſpel remarkable and aſtoniſhing. He departed this Life in the 56th Year of his Age.

And, like his Maſter, was by ſome deſpis'd;
Like him, by many others, lov'd and priz'd:
But theirs ſhall be the everlaſting Crown,
Not whom the World, but Jeſus Chriſt will own.

Mr. *Whitefield* was not full fifty-six years of age at the time of his death: thirty-four years of which he ſpent in the miniſtry. And if life is to be meaſured by the greateſt activity and enjoyment; ſuch as being always intent upon ſome good deſign, and vigorous in the purſuit of it; filling up every day with actions of importance, worthy of a man and a chriſtian; ſeeing much of the world, and having a conſtant flow of the moſt lively affections, both of the ſocial and religious kind; Mr. *Whitefield*, in theſe thirty-four years may be ſaid to have lived more than moſt men would do, though their lives were prolonged for many ages.

CHAP.

CHAP. XXI.

A Deſcription of his Perſon; a Review of his Life; and the moſt ſtriking Parts of his Character pointed out.

HIS perſon was graceful, and well proportioned: his ſtature rather above the middle ſize. His complexion was very fair. His eyes were of a dark blue colour, and ſmall, but ſprightly. He had a ſquint with one of them *(a)*. His features were in general good and regular. His countenance was manly, and his voice exceeding ſtrong; yet both were ſoftened with an uncommon degree of ſweetneſs. He was always very clean and neat, and often ſaid pleaſantly "that a "miniſter of the goſpel ought to be without ſpot." His deportment was decent and eaſy, without the leaſt ſtiffneſs or formality: and his engaging polite manner made his company univerſally agreeable. In his youth he was very ſlender, and moved his body with great agility to action, ſuitable to his diſcourſe: but about the fortieth year of his age, he began to grow corpulent; which however was

(*a*) Occaſioned either by the ignorance, or the careleſſneſs of the nurſe who attended him in the meaſles, when he was about four years old.

ſolely the effect of his diſeaſe, being always, even to a proverb, remarkable for his moderation both in eating and drinking. Several prints have been done of him, which exhibit a very bad likeneſs. The beſt reſemblance of him in his younger years, before he became corpulent, is that metzotinto ſcraping which repreſents him at full length, with one hand on his breaſt, and holding a ſmall bible in the other: but the late paintings, the one by Mr. *Hone*, and the other by Mr. *Ruſſell*, as they are the beſt pictures that ever were done of him, are certainly the juſteſt likeneſſes of his perſon. An elegant copper plate of the firſt, by Mr. *Picot*, is given with this account of his life; and a very fine metzotinto ſcraping of the laſt is juſt publiſhed, done by Mr. *Watſon*. Mr. *Ruſſell*'s painting, from which the ſcraping is taken, was the laſt picture which Mr. *Whitefield* ſat for, and was drawn only two years before he died. Both the copper plate and the ſcraping will no doubt be very acceptable to Mr. *Whitefield*'s friends, as the one will be an ornament to the cloſet, and the other to the parlour.

In reviewing the life of this extraordinary man, the following particulars appear very remarkable.

Firſt, we are ſtruck with his unwearied diligence in the offices of religion, and his conſcientious improvement of every portion of his time. Early in the morning he roſe to his maſter's work, and all the day long was employed in a continual ſucceſſion of different duties. Take a view of his public conduct; here he is engaged either in preaching

ing the gospel, in visiting and giving counsel to the afflicted, in instructing the ignorant, or in celebrating the praises of God. Observe his behaviour in private company; there you hear him introducing, upon all occasions, and among all sorts of people, discourse that tended to edification. And if you follow him to his retirements; you see him writing devout meditations upon the occurrences of the day, or letters to his christian acquaintance full of piety and zeal. What a gloomy idea must a stranger to vital piety entertain of a life spent in this manner? He will think it must have been not only joyless and disgusting, but intolerably burthensome. Far otherwise did it appear in the experience of this servant of Christ. He felt the greatest enjoyment when engaged in a constant round of social and religious duties. In these, whole weeks past away like one day. And when he was visited with any distress or affliction, preaching, as he tells us himself, was his catholicon, and prayer his antidote against every trial. The pleasure of a man of business in successfully pushing his trade, or of a philosopher when pursuing his favourite studies, may give us some faint conception of the joys which he felt: yet so ardent were his desires after the heavenly happiness, that he often longed to finish his work, and to go home to his Saviour *(a)*.

Again,

(a) "Blessed be God, the prospect of death is pleasant to my soul. I would not live here always. I want to be gone. Letter CCXLVIII.

"Some-

Again, we are juſtly ſurprized at his frequent and fervent preaching under all the diſadvantages of a ſickly conſtitution, and the many fits of illneſs with which he was ſuddenly ſeized. It muſt indeed be confeſſed, that change of air, frequent travelling on horſeback, and the many voyages he made, might contribute to the preſervation of his health and vigour: but when we conſider what exertion of voice was neceſſary to reach his large congregations; that he preached generally twice or thrice every day, and often four times on the Lord's day; but above all, what waſte of ſtrength and ſpirits every ſermon muſt have coſt him, through the earneſtneſs of his delivery; it is truly aſtoniſhing, how his conſtitution could hold out ſo long *(b)*.

But there is another circumſtance not leſs remarkable than either of the former, which is, the uncommon deſire that all ſorts of people expreſſed to attend his preaching; and that not upon the firſt or ſecond viſit only, but at every ſucceeding opportunity. Wherever he went, prodigious numbers flocked to hear him. His congregations often conſiſted of four or five thouſand: in populous places

" Sometimes it ariſes from a fear of falling. Some-
" times from a proſpect of future labours and ſufferings.
" But theſe are times when my ſoul hath ſuch foretaſtes
" of GOD, that I long more eagerly to be with Him;
" and the proſpect of the happineſs which the ſpirits of
" juſt men made perfect now enjoy, often carries me, as
" it were, into another world." Letter XCVI.

(b) " I preach till I ſweat through and through." Letter XLVI.

they

they ſwelled to ten, ſometimes fourteen: and upon ſome occaſions the concourſe was ſo great, that they have been computed to be from twenty to thirty thouſand.

It is wonderful to think how he commanded the attention of ſuch multitudes; with what compoſure they liſtened when he began to ſpeak; how they hung upon his lips, and were often diſſolved in tears: and this was the caſe with perſons of the moſt hardy and rugged, as well as thoſe of ſofter tempers.

His eloquence was indeed very great, and of the trueſt and nobleſt kind. He was utterly devoid of all appearance of affectation. He ſeemed to be quite unconſcious of the talents he poſſeſſed. The importance of his ſubject, and the regard due to his hearers, engroſſed all his concern. He ſpake like one who did not ſeek their applauſe, but was concerned for their beſt intereſts, and who, from a principle of unfeigned love, earneſtly endeavoured to lead them in the right way. And the effect in ſome meaſure correſponded to the deſign. They did not amuſe themſelves with commending his diſcourſes; but being moved and perſuaded by what he ſaid, entered into his views, felt his paſſions, and were willing, for that time at leaſt, to comply with all his requeſts. This was eſpecially remarkable at his charity ſermons *(c)*,

(*c*) Which he preached for a great many others, beſide his own orphans in *Georgia*. See his Life.

when

when the moſt worldly-minded were made to part with their money in ſo generous a manner, that when they returned to their former temper, they were ready to think that it had been conjured from them by ſome inexplicable charm. The charm, however, was nothing elſe than the power of his irreſiſtible eloquence, in which reſpect it is not eaſy to ſay, whether he was ever excelled either in ancient or modern times.

He had a ſtrong and muſical voice, and a wonderful command of it. His pronunciation was not only proper, but manly and graceful. Nor was he ever at a loſs for the moſt natural and ſtrong expreſſions. Yet theſe in him were but lower qualities. The grand ſources of his eloquence were an exeeeding lively imagination, which made people think they ſaw what he deſcribed; an action ſtill more lively if poſſible, by which, while every accent of his voice ſpoke to the ear, every feature of his face, every motion of his hands, and every geſture ſpoke to the eye; ſo that the moſt diſſipated and thoughtleſs found their attention involuntarily fixed, and the dulleſt and moſt ignorant could not but underſtand. He had likewiſe a certain elevation of mind, which raiſed him equally above praiſe and cenſure, and added great authority to whatever he ſaid *(d)*. But what was per-

(*d*) The natural language of this chriſtian fortitude we have in Letter CCLXXXIII. "The LORD only "knows how he will be pleaſed to diſpoſe of me; great afflictions

perhaps the moſt important of all, he had a heart deeply exerciſed in all the ſocial, as well as the pious and religious affections, and was at the ſame time moſt remarkably communicative, by which means he was peculiarly fitted to awaken like feelings in others, and to ſympathize with every one that had them.

This laſt, ſome have thought was the diſtinguiſhing part of his character. It was certainly, however, an eminent part of it. In his journals and letters, an impartial reader will find inſtances thereof almoſt in every page: ſuch as, lively gratitude to God in the firſt place, and to all whom God had uſed as inſtruments of good to him: ſincere love in dealing ſo plainly with his correſpondents about the intereſt of their ſouls *(e)*: frequent and particular interceſſion for his friends, his enemies, and all mankind: great delight in the ſociety of chriſtian acquaintance: many very ſorrowful partings, and joyful meetings with his friends: tender heartedneſs to the afflicted: the Pleaſure in procuring and adminiſtring ſeaſonable ſupply to the indigent: and condeſcenſion to people of the loweſt rank, to inſtruct and converſe with them for their good, in as kind and ſociable

" afflictions I am ſure of having; and a ſudden death, " bleſſed be GOD, will not be terrible. I know that " my REDEEMER liveth. I every day long to ſee him, " that I may be free from the remainder of ſin, and en- " joy him without interruption, for ever."

(e) See particularly Letter CXVIII.

a manner, as if he had been their brother or intimate friend. Theſe are manifeſt proofs that he had a heart eaſily ſuſceptible of every humane, tender, and compaſſionate feeling. And this was certainly a great mean of enabling him ſo ſtrongly to affect the hearts of others.

Had his natural talents for oratory been employed in ſecular affairs, and been ſomewhat more improved by the refinements of art, and the embelliſhments of erudition, it is probable they would ſoon have advanced him to diſtinguiſhed wealth and renown. But his ſole ambition was to ſerve a crucified Saviour, in the miniſtry of the goſpel. And being early convinced of the great hurt that has been done to chriſtianity, by a bigotted ſpirit, he inſiſted not upon the peculiar *(f)* tenets of a party, but upon the univerſally-intereſting doctrines of Holy Scripture concerning the ruin of mankind by ſin, and their recovery by Divine Grace; doctrines, the truth of which, he himſelf had deeply felt. To make men ſenſible of the miſery of their alienation from God; and of the neceſſity of juſtification by faith in the Lord Jeſus

(f) "I love all that love our Lord Jeſus Chriſt." Letter LVIII.

"Oh how do I long to ſee bigotry and party-zeal "taken away, and all the Lord's ſervants more knit to-"gether." Letter LXVIII.

"I wiſh all names among the ſaints of God, were "ſwallowed up in that one of *Chriſtian*." Letter CXX.

And to the ſame purpoſe in many other places.

Chriſt,

Chriſt, of regeneration by the Holy Spirit, and of a life of devotedneſs to God, was the principal aim of all his diſcourſes. "The only Methodiſm, I "deſire to know," ſays he, *(g)* "is a holy method "of dying to ourſelves, and of living to God." By this deſcription, he was far from intending to confine true religion to the exerciſes of devotion. By "living to God" he meant a conſtant endeavour after conformity to the Divine Will in all things. For, ſays he, in another *(h)* place, "It "is a great miſtake to ſuppoſe religion conſiſts "only in ſaying our prayers. Every chriſtian lies "under a neceſſity to have ſome particular calling "whereby he may be a uſeful member of the ſo-"ciety to which he belongs. A man is no far-"ther holy than he is relatively holy: and he only "will adorn the Goſpel of our Lord Jeſus Chriſt "in all things, who is careful to perform all the "civil offices of life, with a ſingle eye to God's "glory, and from a principle of lively faith in "Jeſus Chriſt our Saviour. This is the morality "whch we preach." He uſed alſo to give this definition of true religion, "that it is a univerſal "morality founded upon love of God, and faith "in the Lord Jeſus Chriſt." Licentiouſneſs and luxury, and all ſorts of time-waſting and diſſipating amuſements, how faſhionable ſo ever, he conſtantly inveighed againſt. Theſe were the topics on which he employed his eloquence.

(g) Preface to the Journals, in the edition of 1756.

(h) Journals, *May* 1739.

But

But not to dwell any longer on his accompliſhments as an orator, and the excellent purpoſes to which, through the grace of God, he devoted them; one thing remains to be mentioned, of an infinitely higher order than any human powers whatever: and that is, the power of God, which ſo remarkably accompanied the labours of his ſervant, and without which both ſcripture and experience teach us, that all external means, however excellent, are ineffectual and vain. It is here Mr. *Whitefield* is moſt to be envied, were it lawful to envy any man. When we conſider the multitudes that were not only awakened, but brought under laſting religious impreſſions by his miniſtry; and the multitudes that were wrought upon in the ſame manner by the miniſtry of others excited by his *(i)* example, both in *Great Britain* and *America*, we are naturally led into the ſame ſentiments with Mr. *Weſley* in his funeral ſermon, "What an ho-
"nour hath it pleaſed God to put upon his faith-
"ful ſervant! Have we read or heard of any per-
"ſon ſince the apoſtles, who teſtified the goſpel
"of the grace of God, through ſo widely extend-
"ed a ſpace, through ſo large a part of the habi-
"table world? Have we read or heard of any
"perſon, who called ſo many thouſands, ſo many
"myriads of ſinners to repentance. Above all,
"have we read or heard of any who has been a

(i) See Hiſt. Coll. of the Succeſs of the Goſpel. Vol. II.

"bleſſed

" bleſſed inſtrument in his hand of bringing ſo " many ſinners from darkneſs to light, and from " the power of ſatan unto God?"

This excellent character joined to talents ſo extraordinary, and to labours, which God was pleaſed to bleſs with almoſt unequalled ſucceſs, was ſhaded with ſome infirmities. And what elſe could be expected in the preſent condition of humanity? Theſe have been ſufficiently laid open in the preceding Narrative of his Life. And it ought to be obſerved, that as there was ſomething very amiable in the frankneſs and unreſervedneſs which prevented his concealing them; ſo through his openneſs to conviction, his teachableneſs, *(k)* and his readineſs

(*k*) " May God reward you for watching over my " ſoul. It is difficult, I believe, to go through the " fiery trial of popularity and applauſe, untainted." Letter LXI.

" When I am unwilling to be told of my faults, cor- " reſpond with me no more. If I know any thing of " my heart, I love thoſe moſt who are moſt faithful to " me in this reſpect. Henceforward, dear Sir, I be- " ſeech you by the mercies of God in Chriſt Jeſus, ſpare " me not." Letter LXXXV.

" We muſt be helps to each other on this ſide eter- " nity. Nothing gives me more comfort, next to the " aſſurance of the eternal continuance of God's love, " than the pleaſing reflection of having ſo many chriſ- " tian friends to watch with my ſoul. I wiſh they would " ſmite me friendly, and reprove me oftener than they " do." Letter CIII.

" I rejoice that you begin to know yourſelf. If poſ- " ſible, ſatan will make us think more highly of our- " ſelves than we ought to think. I can tell this by fatal " experience. It is not ſudden flaſhes of joy, but having

readineſs to confeſs and correct his miſtakes, they became ſtill fewer and ſmaller, and decreaſed continually as he advanced in knowledge and experience.

It would be unjuſt to his memory not to take notice upon this occaſion of that uniformity of ſentiment which runs through all his ſermons and writings, after he was thoroughly enlightened in the truth. Indeed, when he firſt ſet out in the miniſtry, his youth and inexperience led him into many expreſſions which were contrary to ſound doctrine, and which made many of the ſermons he firſt printed juſtly exceptionable; but reading, experience, and a deeper knowledge of his own heart, convinced him of his errors, and upon all occaſions he avowed his belief of the 39 articles of the church of *England*, and the ſtandards of the church of *Scotland*, as expreſsly founded on the word of God. He loved his friend, but he would not part with a grain of ſacred truth for the brother of

" the humility of Chriſt Jeſus, that muſt denominate " us Chriſtians. If we hate reproof, we are ſo far from " being true followers of the Lamb of God, that in " the opinion of the wiſeſt of men we are brutiſh." Letter CXII.

" O my dear brother, ſtill continue faithful to my " ſoul; do not hate me in your heart; in any wiſe re- " prove me." Letter CCIV.

" You need make no apology for your plain dealing. " I love thoſe beſt who deal moſt ſincerely with me. " Whatever errors I have been, or ſhall be guilty of in " my miniſtry, I hope the Lord will ſhew me, and give " me grace to amend." Letter CCXCVIII. See alſo Letter DCXE.

his

his heart. Thus we see him constrained to write and print against the *Arminian* tenets of Mr. *John Wesley*, whom he loved in the bowels of Christ Jesus. And it appears from several other tracts in the 4th Vol. of his Works, that he neglected no opportunity of stepping forth as a bold champion, in defence of that faith which was once delivered to the saints.

EXTRACTS

FROM

Some of the FUNERAL SERMONS which were preached on the Occaſion of his DEATH.

MANY Sermons were preached upon occaſion of his death, both in *America* and *England*. From theſe, though they contain nothing materially different from the above accounts, yet the reader will probably not be diſpleaſed to ſee the following extracts; as they not only ſet the character of Mr. *Whitefield* in a variety of lights, but are ſo many teſtimonies to it, by witneſſes of undoubted credit, in different parts of the world.

The firſt was preached by Mr. *Parſons*, the very day on which he died, *(l)* from *Phil.* i. 21. "To me to live is *Chriſt*, and to die is gain." And this is the character he gives of his departed "friend.

"*Chriſt*

(*l*) Early next morning Mr. *Sherburn* of *Portſmouth*, ſent Squire *Clarkſon* and Dr. *Haven* with a meſſage to Mr. *Parſons*, deſiring Mr. *Whitefield*'s remains might be buried in his own new tomb, at his own expence: and in the evening ſeveral gentlemen from *Boſton* came to Mr. *Parſons*, deſiring the body might be carried there. But as Mr. *Whitefield* had repeatedly deſired he might be buried before Mr. *Parſons*'s pulpit, if he died at *Newbury-Port*, Mr. *Parſons* thought himſelf obliged to deny both of theſe requeſts. The following account of his interment, is

" *Chriſt* became a principle of ſpiritual life in " his ſoul, while he was an Under-graduate at " the Univerſity in *Oxford.* Before his conver- " ſion he was a Phariſee of the Phariſees, as " ſtrict as ever *Paul* was, before God met him " on his way to *Damaſcus*, according to his own " declaration in his laſt ſermon, which I heard " him preach at *Exeter*, yeſterday. He was, by " means of reading, a very ſearching, puritani- " cal writer, convinced of the rottenneſs of all " the duties he had done, and the danger of a

is ſubjoined to this ſermon, *viz.* " *October* 2, 1770. At " one o'clock all the bells in town were tolled for half an " hour, and all the veſſels in the harbour gave their proper " ſignals of mourning. At two o'clock the bells tolled " a ſecond time. At three the bells called to attend " the funeral. The Rev. Dr. *Samuel Haven* of *Portſ-* " *mouth*, the Rev. Meſſieurs *Daniel Rogers* of *Exeter*, " *Jedediah Jewet*, and *James Chandler* of *Rowley*, *Moſes* " *Parſons* of *Newbury*, and *Edward Baſs* of *Newbury-* " *Port*, were pall-bearers. The proceſſion was from " the Rev. Mr. *Parſons*'s, of *Newbury-Port*, where Mr. " *Whitefield* died. Mr. *Parſons* and his family, together " with many other reſpectable perſons, followed the " corpſe in mourning. The proceſſion was only one " mile, and then the corpſe was carried into the preſby- " terian church, and placed on the bier in the broad- " alley, when the Rev. Mr. *Rogers* made a very ſuit- " able prayer in the preſence of about ſix thouſand per- " ſons, within the walls of the church, while many " thouſands were on the outſide, not being able to find " admittance. Then, the third hymn of the ſecond " book of Dr. *Watts*'s SpiritualSongs was ſung by the " congregation. After this, the corpſe was put into " a new tomb, before Mr. *Parſons*'s pulpit, which the " gentlemen of the congregation had prepared for that " purpoſe; and before it was ſealed, the Rev. Mr. " *Jewet* gave a ſuitable exhortation, *&c.*"

" ſelf-righteous foundation of hope. When he " heard *Chriſt* ſpeak to him in the Goſpel, he

In Reverendum Virum

GEORGIUM WHITEFIELD,

Laboribus ſacris olim abundantem; nunc vero, ut bene ſperatur cœleſtem et immortalem vitam cum *Chriſto* agentem,

EPITAPHIUM.

(Auctore *Thomâ Gibbons*, S. T. P.)

Electum et divinum vas, WHITEFIELDE, fuiſti
Ingenio pollens, divitiiſque ſacris:
His opibus populo longè latèque tributis,
Tandem perfrueris lætitiâ ſuperum
Inque hanc intrâſti, Domino plaudente miniſtrum:
Expertum in multis, aſſiduumque bonum:
Ecce mei portus, et clara palatia cœli
Deliciis plenis omnia aperta tibi.
Dum matutinam Stellam, quam dulce rubentem!
Vivificos roreſque oſſa ſepulta manent.

ENGLISHED THUS:

" A veſſel choſen and divine, replete
" With Nature's gifts, and Grace's richer ſtores,
" Thou *Whitefield* waſt: theſe thro' the world diſpens'd,
" In long laborious travels, thou at length
" Haſt reach'd the realms of reſt, to which thy Lord
" Has welcom'd thee with his immenſe applauſe.
" All hail, my ſervant, in thy various truſts
" Found vigilant and faithful: See the ports,
" See the eternal kingdoms of the ſkies,
" With all their boundleſs glory, boundleſs joy
" Open'd for thy reception, and thy bliſs.
" Mean time, the body in it's peaceful cell
" Repoſing from its toils, awaits the Star,
" Whoſe living luſtres lead that promis'd morn,
" Whoſe vivifying dews thy moulder'd corſe
" Shall viſit, and immortal life inſpire."

" cried,

" cried, ' Lord, what wilt thou have me to do ?'
" And it seems as if, at that time, it had been
" made known to him that he was a chosen
" vessel, to bear the name of *Christ Jesus* through
" the *British* Nation and her Colonies: to stand
" before Kings and Nobles, and all sorts of
" people, to preach *Christ*, and him crucified.
" From that time the dawns of salvation had
" living power in his heart, and he had an ardent
" desire to furnish himself for the Gospel-ministry.
" To this end, besides the usual studies at the
" college, he gave himself to reading the Holy
" Scriptures, to meditation and prayer; and par-
" ticularly, he read Mr. *Henry*'s Annotations on
" the Bible, upon his knees before God.

" Since my first acquaintance with him, which
" is about thirty years ago, I have highly esteem-
" ed him, as an excellent Christian, and an emi-
" nent Minister of the Gospel. An heart so bent
" for *Christ*, with such a sprightly, active genius,
" could not admit of his stated, fixed residence,
" in one place, as the pastor of a particular con-
" gregation; and therefore, he chose to itinerate
" from place to place, and from one country to
" another; which indeed was much better suited
" to his talents, than a fixed abode would have
" been. I often considered him as an angel fly-
" ing through the midst of heaven, with the
" everlasting Gospel, to preach unto them that
" dwell on the earth; for he preached the un-
" corrupted word of God, and gave solemn

" warnings againſt all corruptions of the Goſpel " of *Chriſt (m)*. When he came the firſt time " to *Boſton*, the venerable Dr. *Coleman*, (with " whom I had a ſmall acquaintance) condeſcend- " ed to write to me, ' That the wonderful man ' was come, and they had had a week of ſab- ' baths; that his zeal for *Chriſt* was extraordinary; ' and yet he recommended himſelf to his many ' thouſand hearers, by his engagedneſs for holi- ' neſs and ſouls.' " I ſoon had opportunity to " obſerve that wherever he flew, like a flame of " fire, his miniſtry gave a general alarm to all " ſorts of people, though before, they had, for " a long time, been amazingly ſunk down into " dead formality. It was then a time in *New* " *England*, that real Chriſtians generally had " ſlackened their zeal for *Chriſt*, and fallen into a " remiſs and careleſs frame of ſpirit; and hypo- " critical profeſſors were ſunk into a deep ſleep " of carnal ſecurity. Miniſters, and their con- " gregations, ſeemed to be at eaſe. But his " preaching appeared to be from the heart, " though too many, who ſpake the ſame things,

(*m*) This may be a proper place to mention what the compiler is juſt now informed of. The late Dr. *Groſvenor*, who was reputed one of the moſt eminent divines of his time, upon hearing Mr. *Whitefield* preach at *Charles-ſquare*, *Hoxton*, about the year 1741, expreſſed himſelf in theſe very ſtrong terms, in the preſence of a very reſpectable gentleman now living, " That if the " Apoſtle *Paul* had preached to this auditory, he would " have preached in the ſame manner."

" preached

" preached as if it were indifferent, whether they " were received or rejected. We were convinced " that he believed the meſſage he brought us, to " be of the laſt importance. Nevertheleſs, as " ſoon as there was time for reflection, the ene- " mies of *Chriſt* began to cavil, and hold up " ſome of his ſallies, as if they were unpardon- " able faults. By ſuch means he met with a " ſtorm as tempeſtuous as the troubled ſea, that " caſts up mire and dirt. Some of every ſtation " were too fond of their old way of formality, " to part with it, for ſuch a deſpiſed cauſe as " living religion. But the ſpirit of *Chriſt* ſet " home the meſſage of the Lord upon the con- " ſciencies of ſome, and ſhook them off from " their falſe hopes: but many began to find " fault, and ſome to write againſt his evangeliz- " ing through the country, while others threaten- " ed fire-brands, arrows, and death. Yet God " gave room for his intenſe zeal to operate, and " fit objects appeared, wherever he went, to en- " gage him in preaching *Chriſt*, and him cru- " cified.

" In his repeated viſits to *America*, when his " ſervices had almoſt exhauſted his animal ſpirits, " and his friends were ready to cry, Spare thyſelf, " his hope of ſerving *Chriſt*, and winning ſouls to " him, animated and engaged him to run almoſt " any riſque. Neither did he ever croſs the *At-* " *lantic*, on an itinerating viſitation, without " viſiting his numerous brethren here, to ſee he

" religion proſpered amongſt them: and we " know that his labours have been unwearied " among us, and to the applauſe of all his " hearers; and, through the infinite mercy of " God, his labours have ſometimes been crowned " with great ſucceſs, in the converſion of ſin- " ners, and the edification of ſaints. And though " he often returned from the pulpit very feeble " after public preaching, yet his engaging ſweet- " neſs of converſation, changed the ſuſpicions " of many, into paſſionate love and friend- " ſhip.

" In many things his example is worthy of " imitation; and, if in any thing he exceeded, " or came ſhort, his integrity, zeal for God, and " love to *Chriſt* and his Goſpel, rendered him, in " extenſive uſefulneſs, more than equal to any of " his brethren. In preaching here, and through " moſt parts of *America*, he has been in labours " more abundant, approving himſelf a miniſter " of God, in much patience, in afflictions, in " watchings, in faſtings, by pureneſs, by the " Holy Ghoſt, by love unfeigned; as ſorrowful, " yet always rejoicing; as having nothing, yet " poſſeſſing all things. And God that comfort- " eth thoſe that are caſt down, has often com- " forted us by his coming; and not by his com- " ing only, but by the conſolation wherewith he " was comforted in us, ſo that we could rejoice " the more.

" His

" His popularity exceeded all that ever I knew; " and, though the aſthma was ſometimes an ob- " ſtruction to him, his delivery and entertaining " method was ſo inviting to the laſt, that it would " command the attention of the vaſt multitudes " of his hearers. An apprehenſion of his con- " cern to ſerve the Lord *Jeſus Chriſt*, and do good " to the ſouls of men, drew many thouſands " after him, who never embraced the doctrines " he taught. He had ſomething ſo peculiar in " his manner, expreſſive of ſincerity in all he " delivered, that it conſtrained the moſt aban- " doned to think, he believed what he ſaid was " not only true, but of the laſt importance to " ſouls; and by adapted texts adduced, and in- " ſtances of the grace of God related agreeable " thereto, he often ſurpriſed his moſt judicious " hearers.

" His labours extended not only to *New Eng-* " *land*, and many other colonies in *Britiſh Ame-* " *rica*, but were eminent and more abundant in " *Great Britain*. Many thouſands at his Chapel " and Tabernacle in *London*, and in other places, " were witneſſes that he faithfully endeavoured to " reſtore the intereſting doctrines of the Refor- " mation, and the purity of the Church to its " primitive glory. Some among the learned, " ſome of the mighty and noble have been called, " by his miniſtry, to teſtify for the Goſpel of " the grace of God. The force of his reaſon- " ings againſt corrupt principles, and the eaſy

" method

" method he had in expoſing the danger of them, " have aſtoniſhed the moſt that heard him, in all " places where he preached. How did he lament " and withſtand the modern, unſcriptural notions " of religion and ſalvation, that were palmed up- " on the churches of every denomination! The " affecting change from primitive purity to fatal " hereſy, together with the ſad effects of it in " mere formality and open wickedneſs, would " often make him cry, as the Prophet did in " another caſe, ' How is the gold become dim, ' and the moſt fine gold changed! How hath the ' Lord covered the daughter of *Zion* with a cloud, ' in his anger, and caſt down from heaven to ' earth the beauty of *Iſrael*.'

" It is no wonder that this Man of God ſhould " meet with enemies, and with great oppoſition " to his miniſtry; for hell trembled before him. " It is no more than may be always expected of " the devil, that he ſhould ſtir up his ſervants, " to load the moſt eminent miniſters of *Chriſt* " with calumny, and moſt impudent lies; and " repreſent them as the filth, and off-ſcouring of " all things. All this may be, and often has " been done, under a pretence of great concern " for the honour of *Chriſt*, and the preſervation " of Goſpel-order. When *Satan*'s kingdom tot- " ters and begins to fall, he can find men enough " to cry, The Church is in danger; and that, he " knows, is ſufficient with many, to hide his " cloven foot, and make him appear as an angel " of light.

" Through

" Through a variety of ſuch labours and trials, " our worthy friend, and extenſively uſeful ſer- " vant of *Chriſt*, Mr. *Whitefield*, paſſed, both in " *England* and *America*: but the Lord was his " ſun to guide and animate him, and his ſhield " to defend and help him unto the end: neither " did he count his own life dear, ſo that he might " finiſh his courſe with joy, and the miniſtry that " he had received of the Lord *Jeſus*, to teſtify " the Goſpel of the grace of God. The laſt " ſermon that he preached, though under the " diſadvantage of a ſtage in the open air, was " delivered with ſuch clearneſs, pathos, and " eloquence, as to pleaſe and ſurprize the ſur- " rounding thouſands. And as he had been " confirmed by the grace of God, many years " before, and had been waiting and hoping for " his laſt change, he then declared, that he hoped " it was the laſt time he ſhould ever preach. " Doubtleſs, he then had ſuch clear views of the " bleſſedneſs of open viſion, and the complete " fruition of God in *Chriſt*, that he felt the plea- " ſures of heaven in his raptured ſoul, which " made his countenance ſhine like the unclouded " ſun."

The next ſermon was preached by Dr. *Pemberton* of (†) *Boſton*, *October* 11, 1770, upon 1 *Peter* i. 4.

(†) The following lines are part of a poem on Mr. *Whitefield*, which is publiſhed along with this ſermon, written by a Negro ſervant-girl of ſeventeen years of age;

i. 4. " To an inheritance—reſerved in heaven for " you."——In which he ſays:

" I am not fond of funeral panegyrics.—But " where perſons have been diſtinguiſhingly honour- " ed by heaven, and employed to do uncommon " ſervice for God's church upon earth, it would " be criminal ingratitude to ſuffer them to drop " into the duſt without the moſt reſpectful no-

age; and who has been but nine years from *Africa*, belonging to Mr. *J. Wheatley* of *Boſton*.

" He pray'd that grace in every heart might dwell;
" He long'd to ſee *America* excel;
" He charg'd it's youth to let the grace divine
" Ariſe, and in their future actions ſhine.
" He offer'd That he did himſelf receive,
" A greater gift not GOD himſelf can give.
" He urg'd the need of Him to every one;
" It was no leſs than GOD's co-equal Son.
" Take Him ye wretched for your only good;
" Take Him ye ſtarving ſouls to be your food.
" Ye thirſty, come to this life-giving ſtream;
" Ye preachers, take Him for your joyful theme.
" Take Him, my dear *Americans*, he ſaid,
" Be your complaints in his kind boſom laid.
" Take him, ye *Africans:* he longs for you;
" Impartial Saviour is his title due.
" If you will chooſe to walk in grace's road,
" You ſhall be Sons, and Kings, and Prieſts, to GOD.
" Great Counteſs! we *Americans* revere
" Thy name, and thus condole thy grief ſincere.
" *New England*, ſure doth feel; the Orphan's ſmart
" Reveals the true ſenſations of his heart.——
" His lonely Tabernacle ſees no more
" A *Whitefield* landing on the *Britiſh* ſhore.
" Then let us view him in yon azure ſkies;
" Let every mind with this lov'd object riſe.
" Thou tomb, ſhalt ſafe retain thy ſacred truſt;
" Till life divine re-animates his duſt."

" tice

" tice. 'The memory of the juſt is bleſſed!'
" Poſterity will view Mr. *Whitefield* in many re-
" ſpects, as one of the moſt extraordinary cha-
" racters of the preſent age. His zealous, in-
" ceſſant, and ſucceſsful labours, in *Europe* and
" *America*, are without a parallel.

" Devoted early to God, he took orders as
" ſoon as the conſtitution of the eſtabliſhed
" Church in *England* allowed. His firſt appear-
" ance in the work of the miniſtry was attended
" with ſurpriſing ſucceſs. The largeſt churches
" in *London* were not able to contain the num-
" bers that perpetually flocked to hear his awaken-
" ing diſcourſes. The crowds daily increaſed.
" He was ſoon forced into the fields, followed
" by multitudes, who hung with ſilent attention
" upon his lips, and with avidity received the
" word of life. The ſpirit of God, in uncom-
" mon meaſure, deſcended upon the hearers.
" The ſecure were awakened to a ſalutary fear
" of divine wrath; and inquiring minds were
" directed to *Jeſus*, the only Saviour of a revolt-
" ed world. The vicious were viſibly reclaimed,
" and thoſe who had hitherto reſted in a form of
" godlineſs, were made acquainted with the
" power of a divine life. The people of God
" were refreſhed with the conſolation of the bleſ-
" ſed Spirit, and rejoiced to ſee their exalted
" Maſter, going on from conquering to conquer;
" and ſinners of all orders and characters, bow-
" ing to the ſcepter of a crucified Saviour.

" His zeal could not be confined within the " *Britiſh* iſlands. His ardent deſire for the wel- " fare of immortal ſouls, conveyed him to the " diſtant ſhores of *America*. We beheld a new " ſtar ariſe in the hemiſphere of theſe weſtern " churches; and it's ſalutary influences were dif- " fuſed through a great part of the *Britiſh* ſet- " tlements in theſe remote regions. We heard " with pleaſure, from a divine of the epiſcopal " communion, thoſe great doctrines of the Goſ- " pel, which our venerable anceſtors brought " with them from their native country. With a " ſoul elevated, above a fond attachment to " forms and ceremonies, he inculcated that pure " and unadulterated religion, for the preſerva- " tion of which our fathers baniſhed themſelves " into an uncultivated deſert. In his repeated " progreſſes through the Colonies, he was favour- " ed with the ſame ſucceſs which attended him " on the other ſide of the *Atlantic*. He preached " from day to day in thronged aſſemblies; yet " his hearers never diſcovered the leaſt wearineſs, " but always followed him with increaſing ar- " dour. When in the pulpit, every eye was " fixed upon his expreſſive countenance; every " ear was charmed with his melodious voice, all " ſorts of perſons were captivated with the pro- " priety and beauty of his addreſs.

" But it is not the fine ſpeaker, the accom- " pliſhed orator, that we are to celebrate from " the ſacred deſk: theſe engaging qualities, if not

" ſanctified

" ſanctified by divine grace, and conſecrated to " the ſervice of heaven, are as the ſounding " braſs, and the tinkling cymbal. When miſim- " proved, inſtead of conveying happineſs to " mankind, they render us more illuſtriouſly " miſerable.

" The gifts of nature, the acquiſitions of art, " which adorned the character of Mr. *Whitefield*, " were devoted to the honour of God, and the " enlargement of the Kingdom of our divine " Redeemer. While he preached the Goſpel, " the Holy Ghoſt was ſent down to apply it to " the conſciences of the hearers; the eyes of the " blind were opened, to behold the glories of " the compaſſionate Saviour; the ears of the " deaf were unſtopped, to attend to the invita- " tions of incarnate love; the dead were ani- " mated with a divine principle of life; many " in all parts of the land, were turned from " darkneſs to light, and from the power of Satan " unto God. Theſe doctrines which we had " been inſtructed in from our infancy by our " faithful paſtors, ſeemed to acquire new force, " and were attended with uncommon ſucceſs when " delivered by him. His diſcourſes were not tri- " fling ſpeculations, but contained the moſt in- " tereſting truths; they were not an empty play " of wit, but ſolemn addreſſes to the hearts of " men.

" To convince ſinners that they were by na- " ture children of wrath; by practice, tranſ-

" greſſors of the divine law; and in conſequence " of this, expoſed to the vengeance of offended " heaven; to diſplay the tranſcendent excellency " of a Saviour, and perſuade awakened minds " to confide in his merits and righteouſneſs, as " the only hope of a guilty world; to impreſs " upon the profeſſors of the Goſpel the neceſſity, " not only of an outward reformation, but an " internal change, by the powerful influences of " the ſpirit; to lead the faithful to a zealous " practice of the various duties of the chriſtian " life, that they may evidence the ſincerity of " their faith, and adorn the doctrine of God " their Saviour; theſe were the reigning ſubjects " of his pulpit diſcourſes.

" If ſinners were converted; if ſaints were " built up in faith, holineſs, and comfort, he " attained his utmoſt aim.

" He was no contracted bigot, but embraced " chriſtians of every denomination in the arms " of his charity, and acknowledged them to be " children of the ſame father, ſervants of the " ſame maſter, heirs of the ſame undefiled in- " heritance.

" That I am not complimenting the dead, " but ſpeaking the words of truth and ſober- " neſs, I am perſuaded I have many witneſſes in " this aſſembly.

" He was always received by multitudes with " pleaſure, when he favoured theſe parts with " his labours; but he never had a more obliging

" reception

" reception than in his laſt viſit. Men of the firſt " diſtinction in the Province, not only attended " his miniſtry, but gave him the higheſt marks " of their reſpect. With what faithfulneſs did he " declare unto us the whole counſel of God? " With what ſolemnity did he reprove us for our " increaſing degeneracy? With what zeal did he " exhort us, to remember from whence we were " fallen, and repent and do our firſt works, leſt " God ſhould come and remove our candleſtick " out of its place?

" Animated with a Godlike deſign of promo- " ting the temporal and ſpiritual happineſs of " mankind, after the example of his Divine Maſ- " ter, he went about doing good. In this he " perſevered with unremitting ardour and aſſiduity " till death removed him to that reſt which re- " mains for the people of God. Perhaps no man, " ſince the apoſtolic age, preached oftner or with " greater ſucceſs *(n)*.

" If

(*n*) As a ſpecimen of his indefatigable labours in the work of the miniſtry, I have ſet down an account of the ſermons he preached after his arrival at *New-Port*, *Rhode-Iſland*, to the time of his death. He ſailed from *New-York*, *Tueſday*, *July* 31, P. M. arrived at *New-Port*, *Friday*, *Auguſt* 3, A. M. and preached

Auguſt 4. At New-Port	*Auguſt* 9. At Providence
5. New-Port	10. Providence
6. New-Port	11. Providence
7. New-Port	12. Providence
8. New-Port	13. Attleborough

" If we view his private character, he will ap-
" pear in a moſt amiable point of light. The
" polite gentleman; the faithful friend; the en-
" gaging companion; above all, the ſincere chriſ-
" tian, were viſible in the whole of his deport-
" ment.

" With large opportunities of accumulating
" wealth, he never diſcovered the leaſt tincture
" of avarice. What he received from the kind-

Aug.	14. At Wrentham	*Aug.*	29. At Boſton
	15. Boſton		30. Boſton
	16. Boſton		31. Roxbury-Plain
	17. Boſton	*Septem.*	1. Milton
	18. Boſton		2. Roxbury
	19. Malden		3. Boſton
	20. Boſton		5. Salem
	21. Boſton		6. Marble-Head
	22. Boſton		7. Salem
	23. Boſton		8. Cape-Ann
	24. Boſton		9. Ipſwich
	25. Boſton		10. Newbury-Port
	26. Medford		11. Newbury-Port
	27. Charles-Town		12. Rowley
	28. Cambridge		13. Rowley.

" From the thirteenth of *September* to the ſeventeenth,
" he was detained from public ſervice by a ſevere indiſ-
" poſition. When recovered he preached

Septem.	17. At Boſton	*Septem.*	19. At Boſton
	18. Boſton		20. Newton.

" The twenty-firſt of *September* he departed from *Boſton*
" upon a tour to the eaſtward, pretty much indiſpoſed.
" But on the twenty-third he preached

Sept.	23. At Portſmouth, New-Hampſhire	*Sept.*	26. At Kittery
	24. Portſmouth		27. Old-York
	25. Portſmouth		28. Portſmouth
			29. Exeter.

" neſs

" nefs of his friends, he generouſly employed in " offices of piety and charity. His benevolent " mind was perpetually forming plans of exten- " ſive uſefulneſs. The Orphan-houſe, which many " years ago he erected in *Georgia*, and the College " he was founding in that Province at the time of " his death, will be laſting monuments of his " care, that religion and learning might be pro- " pagated to future generations.

" I have not, my brethren, drawn an imagi- " nary portrait, but deſcribed a character exhi- " bited in real life. I have not mentioned his " natural abilities, which were vaſtly above the " common ſtandard. I conſider him principally " in the light of a chriſtian, and a miniſter of " Jeſus Chriſt, in which he ſhone with a ſuperior " luſtre, as a ſtar of the firſt magnitude.

" After all, I am not repreſenting a perfect " man; there are ſpots in the moſt ſhining cha- " racters upon earth. But this may be ſaid of " Mr. *Whiteſield* with juſtice, that after the moſt " public appearances for above thirty years, and " the moſt critical examination of his conduct, no " other blemiſh could be fixed upon him, than " what aroſe from the common frailties of human " nature, and the peculiar circumſtances which " attended his firſt entrance into public life.

" The imprudencies of unexperienced youth, " he frequently acknowledged from the pulpit " with a frankneſs which will for ever do honour " to his memory. He took care to prevent any

" bad conſequences that might flow from his un-
" guarded cenſures in the early days of his mini-
" ſtry. The longer he lived, the more he evi-
" dently increaſed in purity of doctrine, in humi-
" lity, meekneſs, prudence, patience, and the
" other amiable virtues of the chriſtian life."

Another Funeral Sermon on Mr. *Whitefield* was preached by Mr. *Ellington*, at *Savannah* in *Georgia*, *November* 11, 1770, upon *Heb.* xi. 26. " Eſteem-
" ing the reproach of Chriſt greater riches than
" the treaſures of *Egypt:* for he had reſpect unto
" the recompence of the reward." In which are the following paſſages *(o)*.

" The receiving the melancholy news of the
" much lamented death of a particular friend to
" this Province, a perſon who was once miniſter
" of this Church, is the reaſon of this diſcourſe;
" and my choice of this ſubject before us, is to
" pay my grateful reſpect to the memory of this
" well-known able miniſter of the New Teſta-
" ment, and faithful ſervant of the moſt high God,
" the Rev. *George Whitefield*; whoſe life was juſtly
" eſteemed, and whoſe death will be greatly re-
" gretted, by the ſincerely religious part of man-
" kind of all denominations, as long as there is

(o) " *Savannah* church was decently hung with mourn-
" ing, by the legiſlative body of the Province."

The ſame public marks of regard were ſhewn at one of the churches in *Philadelphia*, of which Mr. *Sproutt* is paſtor, which, by deſire of the ſeſſion and committee, was put into mourning. Alſo, at their deſire and expence, the bells of *Chriſt-Church*, in that city, were rung muffled.

" one

" one remaining on earth, who knew him, to re-
" collect the fervor of ſpirit, and holy zeal with
" which he ſpake, when preaching the everlaſting
" Goſpel; and every other part of his diſintereſted
" conduct, conſiſtent with the miniſterial character
" in life and converſation. Mr. *Whitefield*'s Works
" praiſe him loud enough; I am not able to ſay
" any thing that can add greater luſtre to them.
" May every one that miniſters in holy things,
" and all who partake of their miniſtrations, have
" equal right to the characteriſtic in the text as
" he had.

" It is the ruling opinion of many, that the
" offence of the croſs is long ſince ceaſed, and
" that whatever evil treatment ſome of a ſingular
" turn may meet with, it is only the fruit of their
" own doings, and the reward of their own work,
" whereby they raiſe the reſentment of mankind
" againſt them for uncharitable ſlander, and ſpiri-
" tual abuſe. But whoever knoweth any thing of
" the Goſpel, and hath experienced it to be the
" power of God unto ſalvation, knoweth this is
" the language of perſons who are unacquainted
" with the depravity of their nature, and through
" the degeneracy of their hearts, are unwilling to
" be diſturbed; therefore are ſaying to the mini-
" ſters of Chriſt, 'Prophecy unto us ſmooth things.'
" But the miniſters of the Goſpel are to be ſons
" of thunder, and ſo to utter their voice, and con-
" duct their lives, as to prove the nature of their
" work.

" Our dear and reverend friend was highly ho-
" noured for many years in being an happy in-
" ſtrument to do this ſucceſsfully. With what a
" holy zeal he proceeded, long before he was
" publickly ordained to the ſacred office, has been
" long atteſted; and no perſon has been able to
" contradict the teſtimony. No ſooner did he ap-
" pear in the work of the ſanctuary, but he ſoon
" convinced his numerous auditories, that his Al-
" mighty Lord who had given him the commiſ-
" ſion, had by his grace wrought him for the ſelf-
" ſame thing; and through the Holy Spirit, at-
" tending his endeavours, made him a workman
" that needed not to be aſhamed. One would
" think his great ſucceſs in his public labours,
" the frequent opportunities he embraced of do-
" ing good, by the relief of people in diſtreſſing
" circumſtances, every occaſion he took to uſe
" his influence for the good of mankind, and the
" whole of his behaviour through a life of fifty-ſix
" years, being (ſo far as the frailty of our preſent
" ſtate will admit) unblameable and unreproveable,
" ſhould have exempted him from contempt and
" reproach. But, quite the contrary, there was
" ſo near a reſemblance with his bleſſed Maſter,
" that obliged him to bear his reproach. He has
" ſuffered with him on earth, and he is now glo-
" rified with him in heaven. He has laboured
" abundantly, and he has been as liberally re-
" proached and maligned from every quarter.
" Clergy and laity have whet their tongues like a

" ſword againſt him, and bent their bows to ſhoot
" their arrows; but the Lord, amongſt all, has
" known and approved his righteous ſervant.
" Though it is well known he has had opportu-
" nity long ſince to enjoy epiſcopal emolument,
" yet, in his opinion (and it will be found he
" judged like a wiſe man in the end) ſinners,
" through his inſtrumentality, being turned unto
" the Lord, and becoming his joy, and crown of
" rejoicing, in the day of our Lord Jeſus, was
" eſteemed a greater honour than any this world
" could afford him. His longing deſire for the
" ſalvation of immortal ſouls, would not admit of
" his being confined within the diſtrict of any
" walls; though it muſt be acknowledged, he
" never thought of commencing field-preacher,
" till his invidious enemies refuſed him church-
" pulpits, with indignation of ſpirit unbecoming
" the loweſt and vulgar claſs of mankind, much
" leſs men profeſſing themſelves preachers of
" Godlineſs. Though he has, throughout the
" whole courſe of his miniſtry, given ſufficient
" proof of his inviolable attachment to our happy
" eſtabliſhment, he was deſirous to countenance
" the image of Chriſt wherever he ſaw it, well
" knowing, that political inſtitutions in any nation
" whatever, ſhould not deſtroy the bleſſed union,
" or prevent the communion which ought to ſub-
" ſiſt thoughout the Holy Catholic Church, be-
" tween real and ſincere chriſtians of all denomi-
" nations. Some people may retain ſuch a vene-

" ration

" ration for apoſtolic phraſes as to ſuppoſe they
" ought not to be applied to other perſons; ſorry
" am I to obſerve, that few deſerve the application
" of them. But of Mr. *Whitefield* we may ſay with
" the ſtricteſt truth, in journeyings often, in pe-
" rils of waters, in perils of robbers, in perils of
" his own countrymen, in perils in the city, in
" perils in the wilderneſs, in perils in the ſea, in
" perils among falſe brethren, in wearineſs and
" painfulneſs, he hath approved himſelf a mini-
" ſter of God. All who knew and were ac-
" quainted with him, ſoon diſcovered in him every
" mark of good ſenſe and good manners; his
" company and converſation was ſo enlivening
" and entertaining, and at the ſame time ſo inſtruc-
" tive and edifying, that no perſon with the leaſt
" degree of common ſenſe, could behave impro-
" perly in his preſence. In him met (which do
" not often meet in one perſon) the finiſhed and
" compleat gentleman, and the real and true
" chriſtian. Why then did he take pleaſure in
" reproaches, and ſubmit to the taunts and inſults
" both of the vulgar and politer part of mankind?
" He had reſpect to the recompence of reward.
" Though the believer's work will never intitle
" him to a reward of debt, yet the reward of
" grace will always excite a holy deſire to render
" ſomething unto the Lord: What wouldſt thou
" have me do? is the inceſſant inquiry of that
" ſoul, who by the merits of the Redeemer's
" death, and the virtue of his precious blood, is

" re-

" redeemed from ſin, and made a partaker of the
" inheritance incorruptible, undefiled, and that
" fadeth not away. Faith operates by good
" works: and let all the men of the world ſay to
" the contrary, or put ever ſo baſe a conſtruction
" upon our doctrine, it will evidence itſelf by
" theſe good fruits. It was from theſe principles
" that Mr. *Whitefield* acted, and they were pro-
" ductive of the deſired effects; not only in alms
" giving, this was but a ſmall matter, when com-
" pared with the happier and more important at-
" tempt which he made for the good of mankind,
" at the hazard of his life, and the expence of an
" unblemiſhed character. How he has preached
" with ſhowers of ſtones, and many other inſtru-
" ments of malice and revenge about his ears,
" many of his ſurviving friends can witneſs; but
" having the ſalvation of ſinners at heart, and a
" great deſire to reſcue them from the power of
" eternal death; he reſolved to ſpend and be ſpent
" for the ſervice of precious and immortal ſouls;
" and ſpared no pains, and refuſed no labour, ſo
" that he might but adminiſter to their real and
" eternal good: And glory be to our good God,
" he hath perſevered and endured to the end of
" his life, having reſpect unto the recompence of
" the reward. Surely nothing elſe could ſupport
" him under ſuch a weight of care, and enable
" him, amidſt it all, for ſo many years, to bear it
" with ſo much chearfulneſs. The worthy inha-
" bitants of this Province do not want my atteſ-
" tation,

" tation, either to the loſs the Province has ſuſ-
" tained, or to the deſire he has had for its proſ-
" perity. His indefatigable endeavours to pro-
" mote it, and the many fervent prayers he has
" night and day offered for it, ſpeak loud enough.
" Happy omens we would hope in favour of it,
" both as to its temporal increaſe, and ſpiritual
" proſperity. May God raiſe up ſome uſeful men
" to ſupply his place, and carry on unto perfection
" what he hath ſo diſintereſtedly begun, that the
" inſtitution he hath founded in this Province
" may be of public utility to the lateſt poſterity!
" As to his death, little more can be ſaid of it,
" than has been communicated to the public al-
" ready. He died like a hero in the field of bat-
" tle; he has been fighting the battles of the
" Lord of Hoſts upwards of thirty years, againſt
" the world, ſin, and ſatan; and he hath been a
" conqueror, he hath fought ſucceſsfully; many,
" very many, converted ſinners are the trophies
" of his victory: but now his warfare is accom-
" pliſhed, the Captain of his Salvation hath granted
" him a diſcharge, he is entered into his everlaſ-
" ting reſt, and is reaping the benefits of a life
" ſincerely dedicated to the ſervice of the once
" crucified, but now exalted Jeſus. He preached
" the day before his deceaſe: though his death
" was ſudden, he was not ſurprized; the morn-
" ing of his departure, not many hours before his
" ſpirit took its flight to the regions of bliſs, he
" prayed to the God of his ſalvation, and com-

" mitted

" mitted his departing ſoul into his hands, as his " faithful Creator and all-merciful Redeemer. " Soon after he ſaid, I am near my end, then fell " aſleep; he fainted, and died; not one ſigh, or " groan; the Lord heard his prayer, and granted " him his requeſt, and gave him an eaſy diſmiſſion " out of time into eternity: ſudden death was his " deſire, and ſudden death was to him ſudden " glory. He has fought the good fight; few, if " any, ſince the apoſtles, hath been more exten- " ſively uſeful, or laboured more abundantly. " Thouſands, I believe I may with propriety " ſay, in *England*, *Scotland*, and *America*, have " great reaſon to bleſs God for his miniſtrations; " for he hath travelled far and wide proclaiming " the glad tidings of ſalvation, through faith in a " crucified Saviour. Adorable *Emmanuel*, make " thou up the loſs of him to thy church and peo- " ple! Let a double portion of thy ſpirit be " poured out upon the remaining miniſters! Let " that holy fire which burnt ſo bright in thy de- " parted ſervant, warm each of their hearts! " And, O thou Lord of the harveſt, ſend forth " more ſuch true and faithful labourers into thy " harveſt!"

A number of Funeral Sermons were preached for him in *England* as well as in *America*. In one by Mr. *D. Edwards*, *November* 11, 1770, upon *Heb.* xi. 4. " By it he being dead, yet ſpeaketh," we have the following character of Mr. *Whitefield*.

" 1. The

" 1. The ardent love he bore to the Lord Jeſus " Chriſt was remarkable. This divine principle " conſtrained him to an unwearied application to " the ſervice of the Goſpel, and tranſported him, " at times, in the eyes of ſome beyond the bounds " of ſober reaſon. He was content to be a " fool for Chriſt's ſake; to be deſpiſed, ſo Chriſt " might be honoured; to be nothing, that Jeſus " might be all in all. He had ſuch a ſenſe of the " incomparable excellence of the perſon of Chriſt, " of his adorable condeſcenſion in taking our na- " ture upon him, and enduring the curſes of the " holy law; his compleat ſuitableneſs and ſuffici- " ency; as the wiſdom, righteouſneſs, ſanctifica- " tion and redemption of his people, that he could " never ſay enough of him. He was ſo convinced " of the happy tendency and efficacy of this prin- " ciple in his own mind, that he made uſe of it, " and propoſed it to others, in the room of a " thouſand arguments, whenever he would in- " culcate the moſt unreſerved obedience to the " whole will of God, or ſtir up believers to a " holy diligence in adorning the doctrine of God " our Saviour in all things; inſpired by this prin- " ciple, nothing frightened or flattered him from " his duty.

" 2. Another pleaſing ingredient in his charac- " ter, and a ſure evidence of the former, was love " to the ſouls of mankind. He rejoiced in their " proſperity as one that had found great ſpoil; " and with St. *Paul* was willing to ſpend and be " ſpent

" ſpent in promoting their happineſs. He loved
" all who loved Jeſus Chriſt in ſincerity, however
" they might differ in ſome circumſtantials. He
" embraced all opportunities to expoſe the malig-
" nant leaven of a party, and to remove preju-
" dices and miſapprehenſions which good people
" too often entertain of one another, when under
" the influence of a ſectarian humour.

" 3. His attachment to the great doctrines of
" the Goſpel was inflexible; having known their
" worth, and experienced their power in his own
" heart, he plainly ſaw, that though they were
" unacceptable to the carnal heart, yet they bore
" the plain impreſs of the infinite wiſdom of
" God. Thoſe important truths, which tend to
" humble the ſinner, to exalt Chriſt, and promote
" holineſs in heart and life, were his darling ſub-
" jects. He did not diſguiſe Goſpel-truths by
" ſome artful ſweetening, to render them more
" palatable to men of corrupt minds: he ſtudied
" to preach the word in its purity, plainneſs,
" and ſimplicity. The warmth of his zeal diſ-
" guſted many who make a mighty outcry about
" candour and charity, and are willing to extend
" it to every ſentiment, except the truths in which
" the Apoſtles gloried. It was his love to the
" truths of God, and the ſouls of men, that led
" him to expoſe thoſe who plead for the rectitude
" and excellency of human nature; deny the pro-
" per Godhead of Jeſus Chriſt, juſtification by
" faith in his righteouſneſs imputed, or the New-

" Birth, and the abſolute neceſſity of the opera-
" tions of the Holy Ghoſt. Faith and holineſs
" were ever united together in his ſyſtem, in op-
" poſition to thoſe who pretend to faith without
" obedience to the law of God as the rule of life.
" He knew errors in the great truths of the Goſ-
" pel are not indifferent, but dreadful and fatal;
" he knew it was not candor and charity to ſay
" that errors in judgment are not hurtful, but
" the greateſt unmercifulneſs and cruelty; there-
" fore he often reproved ſuch ſharply.

" Although he was ſo tenacious of the founda-
" tion-truths of the Goſpel, yet none more candid
" in things that are not eſſential; herein he was
" full of gentleneſs and forbearance. In things
" indifferent he became all things to all men *(p)*.

" 4. To the foregoing particulars in Mr. *White-*
" *field*'s character, I may add his zeal. His chriſ-
" tian zeal was like the light of the ſun, which
" did warm, ſhine, and cheriſh, but knew not to
" deſtroy; full of generous philanthropy and be-
" nevolence, his zeal made him exceeding earneſt
" and importunate in his addreſſes to ſaints and
" ſinners. His zeal returned bleſſings for curſes,
" and prayers for ill treatment: it kindled in
" him a becoming indignation againſt the errors,

(p) As to the difference between eſſentials and non-eſſentials in religion, Mr. *Edwards* refers to the Rev. Mr. *Newton*'s " Review of Eccleſiaſtical Hiſtory, ſo far as it " concerns the progreſs, declenſions, and revivals of " Evangelical Doctrine and Practice."

" follies,

" follies, and ſins of the times: it led him to " weep bitterly over thoſe who would not be perſuaded to fly from the wrath to come: it made " him bold and intrepid in the cauſe of God, and " kept him from that flatneſs and deadneſs which " is too viſible in ſome good miniſters. In theſe " things he was an example to miniſters of every " denomination: and, if the limits of my diſcourſe would admit, I could mention many " things, as to his great charity to the poor, his " humility, *&c.*"

On *Sunday*, *November* 18, 1770, a Sermon was preached on his death at the Chapel in *Tottenham-Court-Road*, and at the Tabernacle near *Moorfields*, by the Rev. Mr. *John Weſley* (*q*). The Text was, *Numb.* xxiii. 10. " Let me die the death of the " righteous, and let my laſt end be like his." And in the ſermon, after giving ſome particulars of his life and death, Mr. *Weſley* ſays,

" 1. We are next to take ſome view of his character. A little ſketch of this was ſoon after " his death, publiſhed in the *Boſton* Gazette: an " extract of which is ſubjoined: ' Little can be

(*q*) *London Chronicle*, *November* 19, 1770. " Yeſterday the Rev. Mr. *Weſley* preached a Funeral Sermon " on Mr. *Whitefield*'s death in the morning, at the Chapel; and in the afternoon, at the Tabernacle: the " inſide of each place was lined with black cloth, and " an eſcutcheon hung on the pulpits. The multitudes " that went with a deſign to hear the Sermon exceed all " belief. The Chapel and Tabernacle were both filled " as ſoon as they were opened."

" ſaid of him, but what every friend to vital " chriſtianity, who has ſat under his miniſtry, will " atteſt. In his public labours he has for many " years aſtoniſhed the world with his eloquence " and devotion. With what divine pathos did he " perſuade the impenitent ſinner to embrace the " practice of piety and virtue: filled with the ſpi- " rit of grace, he ſpoke from the heart, and with " a fervency of zeal, perhaps unequalled, ſince " the days of the apoſtles, adorned the truths he " delivered with the moſt graceful charms of rhe- " toric and oratory. From the pulpit he was un- " rivalled in the command of an ever-crowded au- " ditory. Nor was he leſs agreeable and inſtruc- " tive in his private converſation: happy in a re- " markable eaſe of addreſs, willing to communi- " cate, ſtudious to edify; may the riſing genera- " tion catch a ſpark of that flame which ſhone " with ſuch diſtinguiſhed luſtre in the ſpirit and " practice of this faithful ſervant of the moſt " high God.'

" 2. A more particular and equally juſt charac- " ter of him, has appeared in one of the *Engliſh* " papers *(q)*. It may not be diſagreeable to you " to add the ſubſtance of this likewiſe: ' The cha- " racter of this truly pious perſon, muſt be deeply " impreſt on the heart of every friend to vital re- " ligion. In ſpite of a tender and delicate conſti- " tution, he continued to the laſt day of his life,

(q) London Chronicle, November 8, 1770.

" preach-

" preaching with a frequency and a fervor that " ſeemed to exceed the natural ſtrength of the " moſt robuſt. Being called to the exerciſe of his " function at an age, when moſt young men are " only beginning to qualify themſelves for it, he " had not time to make a very conſiderable pro- " greſs in the learned languages: but this defect " was amply ſupplied by a lively and fertile genius, " by fervent zeal, and by a forcible and moſt per- " ſuaſive delivery. And though in the pulpit he " often found it needful, by the terrors of the " Lord, to perſuade men, he had nothing gloomy " in his nature, being ſingularly chearful, as well " as charitable and tender-hearted. He was as " ready to relieve the bodily as the ſpiritual ne- " ceſſities of thoſe that applied to him. It ought " alſo to be obſerved, that he conſtantly enforced " upon his audience every moral duty, particu- " larly induſtry in their ſeveral callings, and obedi- " ence to their ſuperiors. He endeavoured by the " moſt extraordinary efforts of preaching in diffe- " rent places, and even in the open fields, to rouſe " the lower claſs of people, from the laſt degree " of inattention and ignorance, to a ſenſe of reli- " gion. For this, and his other labours, the name " of *George Whitefield* will long be remembred " with eſteem and veneration.'

" 3. That both theſe accounts are juſt and im- " partial, will readily be allowed; that is, as far " as they go: but they go little farther than the " outſides of his character: they ſhew you the

" preacher, but not the man, the chriſtian, the " ſaint of God. May I be permitted to add a " little on this head, from a perſonal knowledge " of near forty years? Indeed, I am thoroughly " ſenſible how difficult it is to ſpeak on ſo delicate " a ſubject; what prudence is required to avoid " both extremes, to ſay neither too little, nor too " much? Nay, I know it is impoſſible to ſpeak " at all, to ſay either leſs or more, without incur- " ring from ſome the former, from others the " latter cenſure. Some will ſeriouſly think that " too little is ſaid; and others, that it is too much; " but without attending to this, I will ſpeak juſt " what I know, before Him to whom we are all " to give an account.

" 4. Mention has already been made of his un- " paralleled zeal, his indefatigable activity, his ten- " der-heartedneſs to the afflicted, and charitable- " neſs toward the poor. But ſhould we not like- " wiſe mention his deep gratitude to all whom " God had uſed as inſtruments of good to him? " Of whom he did not ceaſe to ſpeak in the moſt " reſpectful manner, even to his dying day. Should " we not mention that he had an heart ſuſceptible " of the moſt generous and the moſt tender friend- " ſhip? I have frequently thought, that this, of " all others, was the diſtinguiſhing part of his " character. How few have we known of ſo kind " a temper, of ſuch large and flowing affections. " Was it not principally by this, that the hearts " of others were ſo ſtrangely drawn and knit to

" him? Can any thing but love beget love? This
" ſhone in his very countenance, and continually
" breathed in all his words, whether in public or
" private. Was it not this, which, quick and
" penetrating as lightning, flew from heart to
" heart? Which gave that life to his ſermons, his
" converſations, his letters? Ye are witneſſes.

" 5. But away with the vile miſconſtruction of
" men of corrupt minds, who know of no love,
" but what is earthly and ſenſual. Be it remem-
" bred, at the ſame time, that he was endued
" with the moſt nice and unblemiſhed modeſty.
" His office called him to converſe very fre-
" quently and largely with women as well as men,
" and thoſe of every age and condition. But his
" whole behaviour toward them, was a practical
" comment on that advice of St. *Paul* to *Timo-*
" *thy*, 'Intreat the elder women as mothers, the
" younger as ſiſters, with all purity.'

" 6. Mean time, how ſuitable to the friendli-
" neſs of his ſpirit, was the frankneſs and open-
" neſs of his converſation? Although it was as far
" removed from rudeneſs on the one hand, as
" from guile and diſguiſe on the other. Was not
" this frankneſs at once a fruit and a proof of his
" courage and intrepidity? Armed with theſe, he
" feared not the faces of men, but uſed great
" plainneſs of ſpeech to perſons of every rank and
" condition, high and low, rich and poor; en-
" deavouring only by manifeſtation of the truth,

" to commend himſelf to every man's conſcience " in the ſight of God.

" 7. Neither was he afraid of labour or pain, " any more than of what man could do unto him, " being equally,

' Patient in bearing ill and doing well.'

" And this appeared in the ſteadineſs wherewith " he purſued whatever he undertook, for his maſ- " ter's ſake: witneſs one inſtance for all, the Or- " phan-houſe in *Georgia*, which he began and per- " fected, in ſpite of all diſcouragements. Indeed, " in whatever concerned himſelf, he was pliant " and flexible: in this caſe he was eaſy to be in- " treated, eaſy to be either convinced or per- " ſuaded; but he was immoveable in the things " of God, or wherever his conſcience was con- " cerned. None could perſuade any more than af- " fright him to vary in the leaſt point from that " integrity, which was inſeparable from his whole " character, and regulated all his words and acti- " ons. Herein he did

' Stand as an iron pillar ſtrong
' And ſteadfaſt as a wall of braſs.'

" 8. If it be enquired, what was the foundation " of this integrity, or of his ſincerity, courage, " patience, and every other valuable and amiable " quality; it is eaſy to give the anſwer. It was " not the excellence of his natural temper; not " the ſtrength of his underſtanding: it was not " the force of education; no, nor the advice of

" his

" his friends. It was no other than faith in a " bleeding Lord; faith of the operation of God. " It was a lively hope of an inheritance incorrup- " tible, undefiled, and that fadeth not away. It " was the love of God ſhed abroad in his heart " by the Holy Ghoſt, which was given unto him, " filling his ſoul with tender, diſintereſted love to " every child of man. From this ſource aroſe " that torrent of eloquence which frequently bore " down all before it. From this, that aſtoniſh- " ing force of perſuaſion, which the moſt har- " dened ſinners could not reſiſt. This it was, " which often made his head as waters, and his " eyes a fountain of tears. This it was which " enabled him to pour out his ſoul in prayer, " in a manner peculiar to himſelf, with ſuch " fulneſs and eaſe united together, with ſuch " ſtrength and variety both of ſentiment and ex- " preſſion.

" 9. I may cloſe this head with obſerving, what " an honour it pleaſed God to put upon his faithful " ſervant, by allowing him to declare his ever- " laſting Goſpel, in ſo many various countries, to " ſuch numbers of people, and with ſo great an " effect, on ſo many of their precious ſouls! " Have we read or heard of any perſon ſince the " apoſtles, *&c.*" (See the concluſion of this paragraph in page 288, immediately before the quotations from Funeral Sermons).

(*r*) On the ſame day (*November* 18, 1770) the Rev. Mr. *Venn* preached at the Counteſs of *Hun-*

(*r*) "AN HYMN.

" Servant of God, well done!
" Thy glorious warfare's paſt.
" The battle's fought, the race is won,
" And thou art crown'd at laſt;
" Of all thy heart's deſire
" Triumphantly poſſeſt,
" Lodg'd by the miniſterial quire
" In thy Redeemer's breaſt.

II.

" In condeſcending love
" Thy ceaſeleſs prayer he heard,
" And bade theſe ſuddenly remove
" To thy compleat reward:
" Ready to bring thee peace,
" Thy beauteous feet were ſhod,
" When mercy ſign'd thy ſoul's releaſe
" And caught thee up to God.

III.

" With ſaints enthron'd on high
" Thou doſt thy Lord proclaim,
" And ſtill to God ſalvation cry,
" Salvation to the Lamb!
" O happy, happy ſoul,
" In extaſies of praiſe,
" Long as eternal ages roll,
" Thou ſeeſt thy Saviour's face.

IV.

" Redeem'd from earth and pain,
" Ah! when ſhall we aſcend,
" And all in Jeſus' preſence reign
" With our tranſlated friend!
" Come, Lord, and quickly come!
" And when in Thee complete,
" Receive thy longing ſervants home,
" To triumph at thy feet!

tingdon's

tingdon's Chapel at *Bath*, on *Isaiah* viii. 18. "Behold I, and the children whom the Lord hath "given me, are for signs and for wonders in "*Israel*; from the Lord of Hosts, which dwelleth "in Mount *Zion*." And of Mr. *Whitefield* he says, "Though the children of Christ are all for "signs and for wonders in *Israel*, yet do they differ as one star differs from another star in glory. "Talents, grace, and zeal, eminently dignify "some; and draw the eyes of men upon them. "In the foremost of this rank, doubtless, is the "Rev. Mr. *Whitefield* to be placed; for his doctrine was the doctrine of the Reformers, of the "Apostles, and of Christ: it was the doctrine of "free grace, of God's everlasting love. Through "Jesus he preached the forgiveness of sins, and "perseverance in holy living, through his faithfulness and power engaged to his people. And "the doctrine which he preached he eminently "adorned by his zeal, and by his works. For if "the greatness, extent, success, and disinterestedness of a man's labour can give him distinction "amongst the children of Christ, we are warranted "to affirm, that scarce any one of his ministers, "since the Apostles days, has exceeded; scarce "any one has equalled Mr. *Whitefield*.

"What a sign and wonder was this man of "God in the greatness of his labours! One cannot but stand amazed that his mortal frame "could for the space of near thirty years, without interruption, sustain the weight of them.

"For

" For what is ſo trying to the human frame, in " youth eſpecially, as long-continued, frequent " and violent ſtraining of the lungs? Who, that " knows their ſtructure, would think it poſſible, " that a perſon, little above the age of manhood, " ſhould ſpeak in the compaſs of a ſingle week " (and that for years) in general, forty hours, and " in very many weeks, ſixty, and that to thou- " ſands; and after this labour, inſtead of taking " any reſt, ſhould be offering up prayers, inter- " ceſſions, with hymns and ſpiritual ſongs, as his " manner was in every houſe to which he was in- " vited. The hiſtory of the Church of Chriſt af- " fords but very few inſtances of men thus inceſ- " ſantly employing their whole ſtrength, and as " it were, every breath they drew, in the buſineſs " of their ſacred function. And the truth is, that, " in point of labour, this extraordinary ſervant of " God did as much in a few weeks, as moſt of " thoſe who exert themſelves are able to do in " the ſpace of a year. Thus labouring not by " fits and ſtarts, but with conſtancy and perſeve- " rance, and ardour unabated, his mortal frame, " about nine years ſince, began to ſink under the " weight of ſo much work. If, with the length " and frequency of Mr. *Whitefield*'s preaching, we " conſider the intenſeneſs of voice and ſpirit with " which he ſpoke, the greatneſs of his labours " will appear perfectly aſtoniſhing: he knew not " how to ſpeak with leſs zeal, in his whole man- " ner, than became the ſubjects of his diſcourſe.

The

" The total ruin of the human race by the fall; " the complete recovery of believers in Chriſt, his " dying love, and the unſearchable riches of his " grace, to be known experimentally in this life, " though fully to be diſplayed in the next; and " the infatuation of ſinners, led captive by their " luſts down to the chambers of death: theſe " grand truths, of more weight than words can " paint, fired his whole ſoul; they tranſported " him as much as earthly ſpirits are tranſported " into vehemence, when they contend perſonally " for their own property; he cried out therefore, " as his dear Lord was wont to do, with a voice " audible to an amazing diſtance: hence, in a " thouſand inſtances, where the cauſe of God " more coolly pleaded, would have been neglected, " he gained it a hearing, and carried the day: for " the unuſual earneſtneſs of the ſpeaker rouſed " the moſt ſtupid and lethargic: it compelled " them to feel; the matter muſt be momentous " indeed, which the ſpeaker was urging as a man " would plead for his own life. Early and often " his body ſuffered for this very violent exertion " of his ſtrength: early and often his inſide has " bled a conſiderable quantity, and cried out, " ſpare thyſelf: but, prodigal of life, in the beſt " of cauſes, he would give himſelf no reſt; ex- " pecting very ſoon to finiſh his courſe, and infi- " nitely deſirous to ſave the ſouls condemned to " die; he periſhed. Though this may be blamed

" as an exceſs, it was an exceſs far above the reach " of a ſelfiſh mind, or an ordinary faith.

" Equal to the greatneſs and intenſeneſs of his " labours, was their extent. The abilities and " grace of moſt teachers, have full employ in a " ſmall diſtrict, nor have common men talents " for more. But when God lights up in the " breaſt, an apoſtolic zeal for his own glory, " an apoſtolic love for the ſouls of men, it ſeems " reaſonable to conclude, ſuch an inſtrument is " deſigned for the moſt extenſive uſefulneſs.

" Accordingly the compaſs of Mr. *Whitefield*'s " labours, exceeds any thing that others can pre- " tend to. Not only in the ſouth, the weſt, and " north of *England*, did he lift up his voice, " ſaying, ' Repent, for the Kingdom of Heaven ' is come :' " but in *Wales*, in *Scotland*, in *Ire-* " *land*, and *America*, from *Georgia* to *Boſton*, vaſt " multitudes in each country were witneſſes of his " zeal for the ſalvation of ſouls.

" And to crown all, he was abundantly ſuc- " ceſsful in his vaſt labours, and diſintereſted too. " The ſeals to his miniſtry, from firſt to laſt, I " am perſuaded, are more than would be credited, " could the number be fixed. This is certain, " his amazing popularity was only from his uſe- " fulneſs; for he no ſooner opened his mouth as " a preacher, than God commanded an extraor- " dinary bleſſing upon his word. The people " were ſo deeply impreſſed with the ſenſe of " divine things from what he delivered, that, to

" his

" his own great ſurprize, they followed him from
" church to church, until the largeſt churches in
" *London* could no longer contain a fourth part
" of the crowds, which preſſed to hear the word
" of God from his lips.

" Should any one ſay, few in compariſon, be-
" ſides the low, ignorant, common people were
" his followers; I would anſwer, the ſouls of the
" poor and ignorant, are to the full as precious
" as thoſe of the rich and learned: and the
" mob have ſhown the juſteſt diſcernment, and
" have received the truth; whilſt men of wealth,
" and learning, and education, have trampled it
" under their feet. Witneſs the chief Scribes and
" Phariſees, who rejected both the Baptiſt and
" the Saviour, when the common people juſtified
" God, and gave them both the honour of being
" ſent from him. Indeed, in every age, we ſee
" the Scripture fulfilled, not many rich, not
" many mighty, not many wiſe men after the
" fleſh are called; but God hath choſen the poor,
" rich in faith, and heirs of the Kingdom.

" However, when the fierceneſs of prejudice
" was worn off, numbers, who at firſt deſpiſed
" him, taught to do ſo by groſs ſlanders, were
" happy under his miniſtry. And this honour
" was put upon him even to the laſt. He had a
" much larger audience ſtatedly to hear him, than
" any man in the whole kingdom, perhaps in
" all *Chriſtendom*.

" And

" And that this vaſt multitude of people were " gathered, juſt as the primitive churches of " *Chriſt*, by the truth they heard, and the ſpi- " ritual benefit they received under his word, is " evident beyond a reaſonable doubt. For if " you trace his progreſs through the various " cities and countries where he preached the " Goſpel, you will find, as the caſe was with " St. *Paul*, ſo it was with this ſervant of *Chriſt*. " Many were turned by him from darkneſs to " light, from the power of Satan unto God, re- " ceiving remiſſion of their ſins, and an inheri- " tance among thoſe that are ſanctified, through " faith in *Chriſt*. Enquire of the effects of his " la' ours, from the only proper judges, thoſe " who live in the religious world, and they will " aver, that many within their own knowledge, " ſmall as that circle muſt be, confeſs they owe " their own ſelves to this faithful witneſs for his " Lord. Add to this, that the letters he re- " ceived of grateful acknowledgment from per- " ſons of all ages and conditions in life, for the " ſpiritual bleſſings he had conveyed to them, " would fill whole volumes. Nay, it is a well- " known fact, that the converſion of men's ſouls " has been the fruit of a ſingle ſermon from his " lips; ſo eminently was he made of God, a " fiſher of men. But he was not more ſucceſs- " ful than he was diſintereſted in his labours; " for though a vaſt multitude, (which muſt ever " be the caſe with thoſe whom God is pleaſed

" remarkably

" remarkably to own) followed him, he had ſtill
" no ambition to ſtand as the head of a party.
" His great object was to exalt *Chriſt* crucified;
" and when his hearers were brought to the
" knowledge of ſalvation, his point was gained,
" and his ſoul was ſatisfied. Hence neither in his
" ſermons, nor more private exhortations, did he
" caſt diſparaging reflections upon other preachers
" of *Chriſt*. No baſe ſuggeſtion dropt from his
" mouth, as if to differ from him muſt be
" owing to blindneſs in the judgment, or coldneſs
" of the heart for the intereſts of holineſs.
" Truly cordial and catholic in his love for all
" who appeared to love the Lord *Jeſus* in ſin-
" cerity, he never deſired to ſee his congregation
" increaſed by thoſe who had evangelical paſtors
" of their own. Further, in proof of his diſin-
" tereſtedneſs, conſider what he gained by his
" labours. The ſcourge of the tongue was let
" looſe upon him, and his name was loaded with
" the foulest calumnies; he was often in tumults,
" and more than once in danger of his life, by
" the rage of the people; he wore himſelf away
" in the ſervice of ſouls; and when he died, he
" died quite exhauſted by much ſpeaking; but
" in his death, he received an immediate anſwer
" to his own prayer, 'That if it were conſiſtent
" with the Divine Will, he might finiſh that day
" his Maſter's work.'

" For ſuch a life, and ſuch a death, (though in
" tears under our great loſs) we muſt yet thank
" God.

" God. And though we are allowed to ſorrow, " becauſe we ſhall never ſee or hear him again, " we muſt rejoice that millions have heard him " ſo long, ſo often, and to ſuch good effect; " that out of this maſs of people, multitudes are " gone before him, we doubt not, to hail his " entrance into the world of glory; and that in " every period of life, from childhood to hoary " age, many of his children in the Lord are ſtill " to follow; all to be his crown of rejoicing: " the only effectual, everlaſting confutation of " his adverſaries; that he ran not in vain, nor " laboured in vain."

There were many other ſermons preached on occaſion of Mr. *Whitefield*'s death, in which the deſcriptions of his character are the ſame in ſubſtance, with thoſe already given *(s)*.

To

(s) Such as, by the Rev. Meſſ. *Whitaker* and *Smith* of *Charles-Town*; *Sprout* of *Philadelphia*; *Langford*, *Elliott*, *W. M.* and probably others, which have not come to the Compiler's knowledge.

The Rev. Mr. *De Courcy* alſo wrote ſome Elegiac lines, among which are the following:

" Soon as the Spirit's unction from above,
" Throughout his ſoul diffus'd the Saviour's love,
" A fire enkindled in his eager breaſt,
" With pity burn'd to ſinners loſt——
" Straight, like a trumpet, he his voice did raiſe,
" The wonders of redeeming love to praiſe;
" Of health regardleſs, all things did forego,
" That ſinners *Jeſus'* boundleſs grace may konw;

" Where'er

To be the ſubject of ſo many funeral ſermons, both at home and abroad, is ſomething ſingular; though

" Where'er he preach'd, attentive crowds were ſeen,
" Aſtoniſh'd at his youth and zealous mein:
" Let *Kennington*, *Blackheath*, *Moorfields* declare,
" How oft the Goſpel-trumpet ſounded there.
" Nor could his zeal the vaſt *Atlantic* bound——
" Throughout the weſtern world he *Chriſt* diſplays,
" And joyful news to *Georgia*'s coaſt conveys.
" There orphans yet unborn, ſhall weeping tell
" How mourn'd, the founder of *Bethéſda* fell——
" The love of *Jeſus* was his darling theme;
" An heaven he felt in that dear precious name:
" Hence when his heart with ſacred ardor glow'd,
" His tongue in prompteſt elocution flow'd:
" With what compaſſion, energy, and fire,
" Would he the guilty heart for *Chriſt* require!
" Oft while his maſter's glorious grace he ſhow'd,
" An arrow dipt in *Jeſus*' precious blood,
" Th' aſpiring ſinner in the duſt brought low,
" And forc'd him at the bleeding croſs to bow—
" Whene'er he meant the power of ſin to kill,
" And carnal hearts with pureſt love to fill,
" Tranſgreſſors he to *Calvary*'s ſummit led,
" Where *Jeſus*, ſpotleſs victim, bowed his head.
" But, as a glaſs, the ſinner's guilt to ſhow,
" The Law he brought with all it's curſe and woe,
" The conſcience wounded with this flaming ſword,
" While *Sinai* ſeem'd to thunder in his word.
" But—whilſt each terror of the Lord and threat,
" With zeal and faithfulneſs he did repeat,
" He all diſſolv'd in ſorrow would appear,
" While plenteous flow'd the ſympathetic tear;
" Like *Jeſus*, who o'er bloody *Salem* mourn'd,
" While wrath divine againſt it vengeful burn'd—
" In prayer, with a peculiar gift endow'd,
" Reverent before the throne of grace he bow'd;
" In tears, like *Jacob*, with the Angel ſtrove,
" Prevail'd, like *Iſrael*, with the GOD of Love.—

though quite ſuitable to his extraordinary manner of life. But it was ſtill more ſingular, to have a ſermon preached upon his perſonal and miniſterial character, in his own life-time, and when he was but twenty-ſix years of age. This ſermon was preached by the Rev. Mr. *Joſiah Smith* of *Charles-town*, *South Carolina*, and was publiſhed at *Boſton*, with a recommendatory preface by the Rev. Dr. *Colman* and Mr. *Cooper*, in the year 1740. Of this it is worth while to make a ſhort extract *(t)*, after all that has been

" For all he pray'd——and all in love receiv'd,
" With heart capacious, who in *Chriſt* believ'd.
" In him there dwelt a ſpirit generous, bold,
" Unaw'd by threatenings, unallur'd by gold.
" Preferments, honours, eaſe, he deem'd but loſs,
" Vile and contemptible for *Jeſus'* Croſs.—
" Enur'd to ſcandal, injuries, and pain,
" To him to live was *Chriſt*; to die was gain."

In a note upon the laſt paragraph, the author ſays, " Whoever is acquainted with Mr. *Whitefield*'s life, " well knows that I have not exaggerated matters. " For in a viſit to *Ireland*, he was ſollicited by the Pri- " mate of that kingdom, to accept of ſome conſider- " able church preferment; but declined the offer, be- " cauſe he looked upon himſelf as called to an itinerant " life; and what makes this circumſtance the more re- " markable, is, that Mr. *Whitefield*, at that time, had " no proſpect whatever, as to temporals".

See alſo, a Paſtoral on Mr. *Whitefield*, ſaid to be written by the Hon. and Rev. Mr. *Shirley*; an Elegy, containing a ſhort Hiſtory of his Life, by the Rev. Mr. *Knight* of *Halifax*; and another Elegy, and a Monody, by anonymous authors.

(t) A large Extract both of the Preface and Sermon, is to be found in *Prince*'s Chriſtian Hiſtory, No XCIX.

ſaid;

ſaid; that by comparing it with the funeral ſermons, the reader may ſee how conſiſtent and uniform Mr. *Whitefield*'s conduct was, from that early period of his miniſtry, till his death.

After ſpeaking of his doctrine concerning Original Sin—Juſtification by faith alone—Regeneration—The inward feelings of the Spirit—Mr. *Smith* adds, " As to the manner of his preach-
" ing—With what a flow of words did he ſpeak
" to us, upon the great concern of our ſouls!
" In what a flaming light did he ſet out eternity
" before us! How earneſtly did he preſs *Chriſt*
" upon us! How cloſe, ſtrong, and pungent
" were his applications to the conſcience; mingle-
" ing light and heat; pointing the arrows of the
" Almighty at the heart of ſinners, while he
" poured in the balm on the wounds of the con-
" trite! How bold and courageous did he look?
" He was no flatterer. He taught the way of
" God in truth, and regarded not the perſons of
" men. The politeſt and moſt modiſh of our
" vices he ſtruck at, the moſt faſhionable enter-
" tainments; regardleſs of every ones preſence,
" but His in whoſe name he ſpake.

" As to his perſonal character, while he preaches
" up faith alone in our juſtification before God,
" he is careful to maintain good works. Theſe
" things the grace of God teaches us. And how
" much of this doctrine has he tranſcribed into
" his life! How rich has he been in all good
" works! What an eminent pattern of piety to-

" wards God! How holy and unblameable in all " converſation and godlineſs! How ſeaſoned, how " much to the uſe of edifying all his diſcourſes! " How naturally does he turn them to religion? " How much is he given to devotion himſelf, " and how does he labour to excite it in others!

" He affects no party in religion, nor ſets him- " ſelf at the head of any. He is not bigotted to " the leſſer rites and forms of religion, while " zealous enough in all its eſſentials. He pro- " feſſes love to good men of every denomination. " His heart ſeems ſet upon doing good. He " goes about his great Maſter's work with dili- " gence and application, and with ſuch chearful- " neſs as would make one in love with a life of " religion. He is proof againſt reproach and in- " vective. When he is reviled, he revileth not " again; but prays heartily for all his enemies.

" He renders to all their due. While zealous " for the things of God, is a friend to *Cæſar*. " And for charity, as it conſiſts in compaſſion " and acts of beneficence, we have few men like- " minded. Had he been under any criminal " influence of a mercenary temper; had he col- " lected monies for himſelf in his journeys, un- " der the pretext of doing it for the poor, as he " was ſlanderouſly reported, he had certainly a " fair opportunity to enrich himſelf. But we " have ſeen; and plain fact cannot be denied; " that he caſts all into the Treaſury, and ſerves " the tables of the poor with it. Strolling, and

" vagabond

" vagabond orphans, without father, and without " mother, without purſe, and without friend, he " ſeeks out, picks up, and adopts into his family. " He is now building accommodations, and lay- " ing the beſt foundation for their ſupport and " maintenance." Thus far Mr. *J. Smith*, who had the pleaſure of ſeeing this character of his friend verified in the whole of his future life; and who, in his Funeral Sermon upon him at *Charles-town*, *October* 28, 1770, has this remarkable expreſſion, concerning a viſit he made to Mr. *Whitefield* at his Orphan-Houſe: " It was a ſcene " that made me think I was in heaven."

By a paper, written with Mr. *Whitefield*'s own hand, of the contents of his imperfect manuſcript, frequently quoted in the above account of his life, it appears, that if he had lived to finiſh it, the concluſion would have been, " Reflections " upon the whole, containing arguments to prove " the divinity of the work; and anſwers to ob- " jections againſt Field-preaching—Lay-preach- " ing—Irregularities—And the blemiſhes that " have attended it."

As he did not live to execute this deſign, the Reader is referred to what has been publiſhed upon the ſubject by the Rev. Meſſieurs *Jonathan Edwards*, *Hobby*, *Shurtliff*, &c. The Rev. Mr. *Newton* preached a ſermon at *Olney*, *November* 11, 1770, on *John* v. 35. " He was a burn- " ing, and a ſhining light." In which he ſpeaks of Mr. *Whitefield*; an extract of which fol-

" would obſerve, 1ſt. Though he was very " young when he came out, the Lord ſoon " gave him a very clear view of the Goſpel. " In the ſermons he publiſhed ſoon after his " firſt appearance, there is the ſame evangelical " ſtrain obſerveable, as in thoſe which he preached " in his advanced years. Time and obſervation, " what he felt, and what he ſaw, enlarged his " experience, and gave his preaching an in- " creaſing ripeneſs and ſavour, as he grew older " in the work; but from firſt to laſt he preached " the ſame Goſpel, and was determined to know " nothing but *Jeſus Chriſt*, and him crucified. " 2dly. His ſteadineſs and perſeverance in the " truth was the more remarkable, conſidering " the difficulties and ſnares he was ſometimes " beſet with. But the Lord kept him ſteady, " ſo that neither the example, nor friendſhip, " nor importunity of thoſe he dearly loved, were " capable of moving him.

" 3dly. The Lord gave him a manner of " preaching, which was peculiarly his own. He " copied from none, and I never met any one " who could imitate him with ſucceſs. They " who attempted generally made themſelves diſ- " agreeable. His familiar addreſs, the power of " his action, his marvellous talent in fixi -he " attention even of the moſt careleſs, I need not " deſcribe to thoſe who have heard him, and " to thoſe who have not, the attempt would be " vain. Other miniſters could, perhaps, preach

" the

" the Goſpel as clearly, and in general ſay the " ſame things, but, I believe, no man living " could ſay them in his way. Here I always " thought him unequalled, and I hardly expect " to ſee his equal while I live.

" 4th. But that which finiſhed his character " as a ſhining light, and is now his crown of " rejoicing, was the ſingular ſucceſs which the " Lord was pleaſed to give him in winning " ſouls; what numbers entered the Kingdom of " Glory before him, and what numbers are " now lamenting his loſs, who were awakened by " his miniſtry? It ſeemed as if he never preached " in vain. Perhaps there is hardly a place, in " all the extenſive compaſs of his labours, where " ſome may not yet be found who thankfully " acknowledge him as their ſpiritual father. " Nor was he an awakening preacher only where- " ever he came; if he preached but a ſingle " diſcourſe, he uſually brought a ſeaſon of re- " freſhment and revival with him, to thoſe who " had already received the truth. Great as his " immediate and perſonal uſefulneſs was, his occa- " ſional uſefulneſs (if I may ſo call it) was perhaps " much greater. Many have cauſe to be thankful " for him, who never ſaw or heard him. I have al- " ready obſerved that there was a ſomething pe- " culiar in his manner of preaching, in which " no perſon of ſound judgment would venture " to imitate him. But notwithſtanding this, he " was, in other reſpects, a ſignal and happy " pattern and model for preachers. He intro-

" duced

" duced a way of close and lively application to " the conscience, for which I believe many of the " most admired and eminent preachers now living " will not be ashamed, or unwilling to acknow- " ledge themselves his debtors."

There was also a Sermon preached on the occasion by the Rev. Mr. *Samuel Brewer*, of *Stepney*, *London*, which his modesty would not permit him to print. And many others of the ministers, both of the Church, and among the Dissenters in *England*, in their Sermons and Prayers upon the news of Mr. *Whitefield*'s death, bewailed the loss of so great a man, and so faithful and successful a servant of Christ.†

On the 6th of *February* 1771, the executors having received the probat of Mr. *Whitefield*'s Will, Mr. *Keen*, who was perfectly acquainted with every particular of his temporal affairs, immediately published it, with the following preamble:

A S we make no doubt the numerous friends of the late Rev. Mr. *George Whitefield* will be glad of an opportunity of seeing a genuine copy of his last Will and Testament; his Executors have favoured us with a copy of the same, transmitted to them from the Orphan-house in *Georgia*, and which they have proved in the Prerogative Court of *Canterbury*. And as it was Mr. *Whitefield*'s constant declaration he never meant to raise either a purse

† Among these were the Rev. Mr. *Romaine*, Mr. *Madan*, Dr. *Gibbons*, and Dr. *Trotter*.

or

or a party, it is to be remarked, that almoſt the whole money he died poſſeſſed of came to him within two or three years of his death in the following manner, *viz.* Mrs. *Thomſon*, of *Tower-Hill*, bequeathed him 500*l.* By the death of his Wife, including a Bond of 300*l.* he got 700*l.* Mr. *Whitmore* bequeathed him 100*l.* and Mr. *Winder* 100*l.* and it is highly probable, that had he lived to reach *Georgia* from his late northern tour, he would have much leſſened the above ſums, by diſpoſing of them in the ſame noble and diſintereſted manner that all the public or private ſums he has been entruſted with, have been.

'*Georgia.*

'By his Excellency *James Wright*, Eſq; Captain-'General, Governor and Commander in Chief 'of his Majeſty's ſaid Province of *Georgia*, 'Chancellor and Vice-Admiral of the ſame.

'TO all to whom theſe preſents ſhall come, 'greeting: Know ye, that *Thomas Moodie*, 'who hath certified the annexed copy from the 'original, in the Secretary's Office, is Deputy-'Secretary of the ſaid Province, and therefore all 'due faith and credit is, and ought to be, had 'and given to ſuch his certificate.

'In teſtimony whereof, I have hereunto ſet my 'hand, and cauſed the Great Seal of this his Ma-'jeſty's ſaid Province to be put and affixed, dated 'at *Savannah* the tenth day of *December*, in the 'year of our Lord 1770, and in the eleventh

'year

" duced a way of close and lively application to " the conscience, for which I believe many of the " most admired and eminent preachers now living " will not be ashamed, or unwilling to acknow- " ledge themselves his debtors."

There was also a Sermon preached on the occasion by the Rev. Mr. *Samuel Brewer*, of *Stepney*, *London*, which his modesty would not permit him to print. And many others of the ministers, both of the Church, and among the Dissenters in *England*, in their Sermons and Prayers upon the news of Mr. *Whitefield*'s death, bewailed the loss of so great a man, and so faithful and successful a servant of Christ.†

On the 6th of *February* 1771, the executors having received the probat of Mr. *Whitefield*'s Will, Mr. *Keen*, who was perfectly acquainted with every particular of his temporal affairs, immediately published it, with the following preamble:

AS we make no doubt the numerous friends of the late Rev. Mr. *George Whitefield* will be glad of an opportunity of seeing a genuine copy of his last Will and Testament; his Executors have favoured us with a copy of the same, transmitted to them from the Orphan-house in *Georgia*, and which they have proved in the Prerogative Court of *Canterbury*. And as it was Mr. *Whitefield*'s constant declaration he never meant to raise either a purse

† Among these were the Rev. Mr. *Romaine*, Mr. *Madan*, Dr. *Gibbons*, and Dr. *Trotter*.

or

or a party, it is to be remarked, that almoſt the whole money he died poſſeſſed of came to him within two or three years of his death in the following manner, *viz.* Mrs. *Thomſon*, of *Tower-Hill*, bequeathed him 500*l.* By the death of his Wife, including a Bond of 300*l.* he got 700*l.* Mr. *Whitmore* bequeathed him 100*l.* and Mr. *Winder* 100*l.* and it is highly probable, that had he lived to reach *Georgia* from his late northern tour, he would have much leſſened the above ſums, by diſpoſing of them in the ſame noble and diſintereſted manner that all the public or private ſums he has been entruſted with, have been.

'*Georgia.*

'By his Excellency *James Wright*, Eſq; Captain-'General, Governor and Commander in Chief 'of his Majeſty's ſaid Province of *Georgia*, 'Chancellor and Vice-Admiral of the ſame.

'TO all to whom theſe preſents ſhall come, 'greeting: Know ye, that *Thomas Moodie*, 'who hath certified the annexed copy from the 'original, in the Secretary's Office, is Deputy-'Secretary of the ſaid Province, and therefore all 'due faith and credit is, and ought to be, had 'and given to ſuch his certificate.

'In teſtimony whereof, I have hereunto ſet my 'hand, and cauſed the Great Seal of this his Ma-'jeſty's ſaid Province to be put and affixed, dated 'at *Savannah* the tenth day of *December*, in the 'year of our Lord 1770, and in the eleventh

'year

'year of the reign of his Majesty King *George* the Third.

'By his Excellency's command,

'J. WRIGHT.

'THO. MOODIE, D. Secretary.'

"IN the name of the Father, Son, and Holy Ghost, three Persons, but one God; I, *George Whitefield*, Clerk, at present residing at the Orphan-house Academy, in the Province of *Georgia*, in *North-America*, being through infinite mercy in more than ordinarily bodily health, and a perfectly sound and composed mind, knowing the certainty of death, and yet the uncertainty of the time I shall be called by it to my long wished-for home, do make this my last Will and Testament, in manner and form following, *viz.* Imprimis, In sure and certain hope of a resurrection to eternal life, through our Lord Jesus Christ, I commit my body to the dust, to be buried in the most plain and decent manner; and knowing in whom I have believed, and being persuaded that he will keep that which I have committed unto him, in the fullest assurance of faith I commend my soul into the hands of the everloving, altogether lovely, never-failing Jesus, on whose compleat and everlasting righteousness I entirely depend, for the justification of my person and acceptance of my poor, worthless, though, I trust, sincere performances, at that day when he shall come

" in the glory of his Father, his own glory, and " the glory of his holy Angels, to judge both the " quick and dead. In reſpect to my outward " *American* concerns, which I have engaged in " ſimply and ſolely for his great name's ſake, I " leave that building, commonly called the *Or-* " *phan-houſe*, at *Betheſda*, in the Province of *Georgia*, " together with all the other buildings lately " erected thereon, and likewiſe all other build- " ings, lands, negroes, books, furniture, and " every other thing whatſoever which I now ſtand " poſſeſſed of in the Province of *Georgia* aforeſaid, " to that elect Lady, that mother in *Iſrael*, that " mirror of true and undefiled religion, the Right " Honourable *Selina*, Counteſs Dowager of *Hun-* " *tingdon*; deſiring, that as ſoon as may be after " my deceaſe, the plan of the intended Orphan- " houſe, *Betheſda* College, may be proſecuted, or, " if not practicable, or eligible, to purſue the " preſent plan of the Orphan-houſe Academy, on " its old foundation and uſual channel; but if " her Ladyſhip ſhould be called to enter into her " glorious reſt before my deceaſe, I bequeath all " the buildings, lands, negroes, and every thing " before mentioned which I now ſtand poſſeſſed " of in the Province of *Georgia* aforeſaid, to my " dear firſt fellow-traveller, and faithful, invaria- " ble friend, the Honourable *James Haberſham*, " Eſq; Preſident of his Majeſty's Honourable " Council: and ſhould he ſurvive her Ladyſhip, " I earneſtly recommend him as the moſt proper

" per-

" perſon to ſucceed her Ladyſhip, or to act for
" her during her Ladyſhip's life-time, in the affairs
" of the Orphan-houſe Academy. With regard
" to my outward affairs in *England*; whereas
" there is a building commonly called the *Taber-*
" *nacle*, ſet apart many years ago for Divine Wor-
" ſhip, I give and bequeath the ſaid Tabernacle,
" with the adjacent houſe in which I uſually re-
" ſide, when in *London*, with the ſtable and coach-
" houſe in the yard adjoining, together with all
" books, furniture, and every thing elſe whatſo-
" ever that ſhall be found in the houſe and pre-
" miſſes aforeſaid; and alſo the building com-
" monly called *Tottenham-Court Chapel*, together
" with all the other buildings, houſes, ſtable,
" coach-houſe, and every thing elſe whatſoever
" which I ſtand poſſeſſed of in that part of the
" town, to my worthy, truſty, tried friends, *Da-*
" *niel Weſt*, Eſq; in *Churchſtreet*, *Spitalfields*, and
" Mr. *Robert Keen*, Woollen-Draper, in the *Mi-*
" *nories*, or the longer ſurvivor of the two. As
" to the monies, which a kind Providence, eſ-
" pecially of late, in a moſt unexpected way, and
" unthought of means, hath vouchſafed to entruſt
" me with; I give and bequeath the ſum of one
" hundred pounds ſterling to the Right Honou-
" rable Counteſs Dowager of *Huntingdon* afore-
" ſaid, humbly beſeeching her Ladyſhip's accep-
" tance of ſo ſmall a mite, as a pepper-corn of ac-
" knowledgement for the undeſerved, unſought-
" for honour her Ladyſhip conferred upon me, in

" ap-

" appointing me, leſs than the leaſt of all, to be
" one of her Ladyſhip's Domeſtic Chaplains.
" Item, I give and bequeath to my dearly beloved
" friend, the Honourable *James Haberſham* afore-
" ſaid, my late Wife's gold watch, and ten
" pounds for mourning; to my dear old friend,
" *Gabriel Harris*, Eſq; of the city of *Glouceſter*,
" who received and boarded me in his houſe when
" I was helpleſs and deſtitute, above thirty-five
" years ago, I give and bequeath the ſum of fifty
" pounds; to my humble faithful ſervant and
" friend, Mr. *Ambroſe Wright*, if in my ſervice
" and employ, either in *England* or *America*, or
" elſewhere, at the time of my deceaſe, I give
" and bequeath the ſum of five hundred pounds;
" to my brother, Mr. *Richard Whitefield*, I
" give and bequeath the ſum of fifty pounds;
" to my brother, Mr. *Thomas Whitefield*, I give
" and bequeath the ſum of fifty pounds, to be
" given him at the diſcretion of Mr. *Robert Keen*;
" to my brother-in-law Mr. *James Smith*, Hoſier,
" in the city of *Briſtol*, I give and bequeath the
" ſum of fifty pounds, and thirty pounds alſo for
" family mourning; to my niece, Mrs. *Frances*
" *Hartford*, of *Bath*, I give and bequeath the ſum
" of fifty pounds, and twenty pounds for family
" mourning; to Mr. *J. Crane*, now a faithful
" ſteward at the Orphan-houſe Academy, I give
" and bequeath the ſum of forty pounds; to Mr.
" *Benjamin Stirk*, as an acknowledgment of his
" paſt

" paſt ſervices at *Bethesda*, I give and bequeath
" the ſum of ten pounds for mourning; to *Peter*
" *Edwards*, now at the Orphan-houſe Academy,
" I give and bequeath the ſum of fifty pounds;
" to *William Trigg*, at the ſame place, I give and
" bequeath the ſum of fifty pounds; both the
" ſums aforeſaid to be laid out, or laid up for
" them, at the diſcretion of Mr. *Ambroſe Wright*:
" to Mr. *Thomas Adams*, of *Rodborough* in *Glouceſ-*
" *terſhire*, my only ſurviving firſt fellow-labourer,
" and beloved much in the Lord, I give and be-
" queath the ſum of fifty pounds; to the Rev.
" Mr. *Howel Davis*, of *Pembrokeſhire*, in *South*
" *Wales*, that good ſoldier of Jeſus Chriſt; to Mr.
" *Torial Joſs*, Mr. *Cornelius Winter*, and all my
" other dearly beloved preſent ſtated aſſiſtant-
" preachers at Tabernacle and *Tottenham-Court*
" Chapel, I give and bequeath ten pounds each
" for mourning; to the three brothers of Mr.
" *Ambroſe Wright*, and the wife of his brother
" Mr. *Robert Wright*, now faithfully and ſkilfully
" labouring and ſerving at the Orphan-houſe Aca-
" demy, I give and bequeath the ſum of ten
" pounds each for mourning; to Mr. *Richard*
" *Smith*, now a diligent attendant on me, I give
" and bequeath the ſum of fifty pounds, and all
" my wearing apparel which I ſhall have with me
" in my journey through *America*, or on my voy-
" age to *England*, if it ſhould pleaſe an all-wiſe
" God to ſhorten my days in either of thoſe ſitua-

" tions

" tions. Finally, I give and bequeath the ſum of
" one hundred pounds, to be diſtributed at the
" diſcretion of my executors, herein after-menti-
" oned, for mourning among my old *London* ſer-
" vants, the poor widows at *Tottenham-Court*
" Chapel, and the Tabernacle poor, eſpecially
" my old truſty, diſintereſted friend and ſervant,
" Mrs. *Elizabeth Wood*. All the other reſidue, if
" there be any reſidue, of monies, goods, and
" chattels, or whatever profits may ariſe from the
" ſale of my books, or any manuſcripts that I
" may leave behind, I give and bequeath to the
" Right Honourable the Counteſs Dowager of
" *Huntingdon*, or, in caſe of her Ladyſhip's being
" deceaſed at the time of my departure, to the
" Honourable *James Haberſham*, Eſq; before-men-
" tioned, after my funeral expences and juſt debts
" are diſcharged, towards paying off my arrears
" that may be due on the account of the Orphan-
" houſe Academy, or for annual prizes as a re-
" ward for the beſt three orations that ſhall be
" made in *Engliſh* on the ſubjects mentioned in a
" paper annexed to this my will. And I do here-
" by appoint the Honourable *James Haberſham*,
" Eſq; aforeſaid, to be my executor in reſpect to
" my affairs in the Province of *Georgia*, and my
" truſty tried dearly beloved friends *Charles Har-*
" *dy*, Eſq; *Daniel Weſt*, Eſq; and Mr. *Robert*
" *Keen*, to be executors of this my laſt Will and
" Teſtament, in reſpect of my affairs in *England*,
" begging each to accept of a mourning ring.

" To all my other chriſtian benefactors, and more " intimate acquaintance, I leave my moſt hearty " thanks and bleſſing, aſſuring them that I am " more and more convinced of the undoubted " reality, and infinite importance of the grand " goſpel truths which I have from time to time " delivered; and am ſo far from repenting my " delivering them in an itinerant way, that had I " ſtrength equal to my inclination, I would preach " them from pole to pole, not only becauſe I " have found them to be the power of God to the " ſalvation of my own ſoul, but becauſe I am as " much aſſured that the Great Head of the " Church hath called me by his word, provi- " dence, and ſpirit, to act in this way, as that " the ſun ſhines at noon day. As for my ene- " mies, and misjudging, miſtaken friends, I moſt " freely and heartily forgive them, and can only " add, that the laſt tremendous day will ſoon diſ- " cover what I have been, what I am, and what " I ſhall be, when time itſelf ſhall be no more; " and therefore, from my inmoſt ſoul, I cloſe all, " by crying, Come, Lord Jeſus, come quickly; " even ſo Lord Jeſus, Amen and Amen.

" GEORGE WHITEFIELD.

" This was written with the Teſtator's own " hand, and at his deſire, and in his pre- " ſence, ſealed, ſigned, and delivered, at the " Orphan-houſe Academy, in the Province

" of

" of *Georgia*, before us witneſſes, *Anno Do-*
" *mini*, *March* the twenty ſecond, one thou-
" ſand ſeven hundred and ſeventy.

" Signed,
" ROBERT BOLTON,
" THOMAS DIXON,
" CORNELIUS WINTER.

" N. B. I alſo leave a mourning ring to my
" honoured and dear friends and diſintereſted fel-
" low-labourers, the Rev. Meſſrs. *John* and *Charles*
" *Weſley*, in token of my indiſſoluble union with
" them, in heart and chriſtian affection, notwith-
" ſtanding our difference in judgment about ſome
" particular points of doctrine.—Grace be with
" all them, of whatever denomination, that love
" our Lord Jeſus, our common Lord, in ſincerity."

' *Georgia*, *Secretary's Office.*

' A true copy, taken from the original in this
' office, examined and certified: and I do further
' certify that the ſame was duly proved; and the
' Honourable *James Haberſham*, Eſq; one of the
' executors therein named, was duly qualified as
' executor before his Excellency *James Wright*,
' Eſq; Governor and Ordinary of the ſaid Pro-
' vince this 10th day of *December* 1770.

' THO. MOODIE, D. Sec.'

Concerning the manner in which Mr. *Whitefield*'s Tabernacle and Chapel are at preſent ſupplied, the compiler has received the following information:

HAVING by his Will left both of his places of worſhip, his houſes, library, and all things appertaining thereto, to two of his executors in ſurvivorſhip, they have been enabled, through the abundant goodneſs of God, to carry on the work in the ſame manner as in Mr. *Whitefield*'s life-time, without the leaſt diminution either of the largeneſs of the congregations, or the viſible power of God attending the miniſtry there. And as neither of them are miniſters, but engaged in extenſive buſineſs, it appears the more wonderful, and ſhews the work to be begun and carried on by the power of God alone; and it is their earneſt prayer and ſtudy that it may be tranſmitted down, and faithful miniſters and upright perſons raiſed to carry it on when their heads are laid in the duſt. Two of his fellow-labourers were taken off by death, whilſt he was laſt abroad, *viz.* the Rev. Mr. *Howel Davies*, a clergyman, and Mr. *Thomas Adams*, a layman; and a little before, Mr. *Middleton*, all tried and faithful miniſters; but the Lord hath wonderfully raiſed up others in their ſtead. The preſent miniſters are chiefly theſe, the Rev. Mr. *Kinſman* of *Plymouth*, the Rev. Mr. *Edwards* of *Leeds*, the Rev. Mr. *Knight* of *Halifax*, and the Rev. Mr. *Aſhburner*, of *Pool* in *Dorſetſhire*:

ſetſhire: theſe viſit *London* once, and if wrote for, twice a year. The conſtant ones upon the ſpot are, Mr. *Joſs* and Mr. *Brookſbanks.* The Rev. Mr. *De Courcy*, and the Rev. Mr. *Piercy*, and other Clergymen, have often aſſiſted. Beſides theſe, the proprietors have been favoured with the occaſional labours of Mr. *Rowland Hill*, and Mr. *Heath* of *Plymouth:* alſo of many worthy clergymen and diſſenting miniſters from the country, who eſteemed it their privilege to preach to very large, ſerious, and attentive congregations, whoſe hearts have been filled with thankfulneſs, and at the ſame time engaged in prayer for every ſuch miniſter; and an unuſual bleſſing has commonly attended both ſowers and reapers; and it is the earneſt deſire of the proprietors that the pleaſure of the Lord may thus proſper in their hands. They purpoſe, through the bleſſing of God, to let the pulpits be open to every diſintereſted miniſter that may occaſionally come to town, of good moral character, ſound in the faith, of moderate Calviniſtical Principles, without diſtinction of parties or denominations, whoſe talents are ſuitable to preach with life and power to large congregations. And hope for the concurrence of all well-wiſhers to the proſperity of *Zion.*

F I N I S.

London, July 2, 1772.

SINCE this work was finiſhed, the following particulars have come to the Editor's knowledge, *viz.* That Mrs. *Rachel Wells*, of *Philadelphia*, famous in *America* for her ingenious performances in wax-work, made a wax image of Mr. *Whitefield*, as large as life, properly dreſſed, before Mr. *Whitefield* died: and (from her regard to the memory of that great and good man) ſoon after his death, carried it, at her own expence, to *Georgia*, (upwards of 900 miles) and made a preſent of it to *Bethesda* College. The likeneſs is ſaid to be ſo ſtriking, that it aſtoniſhes all who have ſeen it. Her ſiſter, Mrs. *Wright*, of *New-York*, who poſſeſſes the ſame uncommon genius for wax-work, is lately arrived in *London*, and has brought over with her ſeveral of her performances: among them is a wax image of Mr. *Whitefield*, dreſſed in his own wig, band, *&c.* ſo like the original, that all who have ſeen it have in the ſtrongeſt terms expreſſed their approbation. It is ſaid ſhe is come over, at the deſire of ſome gentlemen in *New-York*, to take off ſome of the capital characters in *England*, *viz.* Lord *Chatham*, Mrs. *Macaulay*, Mr. *Garrick*, *&c.* and from the ſpecimen ſhe has given of her abilities in Mr. *Whitefield*'s image, will no doubt meet with encouragement ſuitable to her merit.

BOOKS Printed for, and Sold by EDWARD and CHARLES DILLY, in the Poultry.

1. THE WORKS of the Rev. GEORGE WHITEFIELD, M. A. containing his SERMONS and TRACTS which have been already publiſhed: With a SELECT COLLECTION of LETTERS, written to his moſt intimate Friends, and Perſons of Diſtinction in England, Scotland, Ireland, and America, from the Year 1734 to 1770, including the whole Period of his Miniſtry. Alſo ſome other Pieces on Important Subjects, never before printed, prepared by Himſelf for the Preſs. 6 Vols. 8vo. Price 1l. 11s. 6d. boards, or 1l. 16s. bound.

Note, The Three Firſt Volumes, containing his LETTERS, may be had alone, Price bound 18s.

The Two laſt SERMONS of his Works, entitled, *Peter's Denial of his Lord*, and *The true Way of beholding the Lamb of God*, are printed ſeparate, Price 6d.

2. Hiſtorical Collections relating to remarkable Periods of the Succeſs of the Goſpel, and eminent Inſtruments employed in promoting it. By John Gillies, D. D. Miniſter of Glaſgow. 2 Vols. 8vo. Price bound 10s.

3. Devotional

3. Devotional Exercises on the New Testament. By the same Author, 8vo. Price bound 4s. 6d.

4. Dickinson's Familiar Letters, on Subjects in Religion. 12mo. Price 3s. bound.

5. Erskine's Gospel Sonnets, 12mo. Price 1s. 6d. bound.

6. Erskine's Sermons, 3 Vols. 8vo. 15s. bound.

7. Flavel's Husbandry Spiritualized, 12mo. 3s. bound.

8. Flavel's Navigation Spiritualized, 12mo. 2s. bound.

9. Henry's (Matth.) Life, 12mo. 2s. bound.

10. M'Laurin's Sermons and Essays, published from the Author's Manuscript, by Dr. Gillies, 2d Edition, 12mo. Price 3s. 6d. bound.

11. Moir's Sermons, 12mo. Price 3s. bound.

12. Muir's Parable of the Sower, 12mo. Price 3s. bound.

13. —— Christ's Cross and Crown, Price 1s. 6d. bound.

14. M'Ewen on the Types, 12mo. 3s. bound.

F-1801

UNIVERSITY OF CALIFORNIA LIBRARY
Los Angeles
This book is DUE on the last date stamped below.

REC'D LD-URL
MAY 30 1985

REC'D LD-URL
NOV 29 1986

REC'D LD-URL
OCT 18 1993

REC'D LD-URL
MAR 15 1996

3 1158 00986 3035

UC SOUTHERN REGIONAL LIBRARY FACILITY
AA 000 309 816 7